





Class F116 \_

Book 11345

SMITHSONIAN DEPOSIT











10  
11-1

PROCEEDINGS OF THE  
NEW YORK STATE  
HISTORICAL ASSOCIATION

WITH THE QUARTERLY JOURNAL

---

THE TWENTY-FIRST ANNUAL MEETING,  
WITH A LIST OF NEW MEMBERS

---

VOL. XIX

---



---

Published by the  
NEW YORK STATE HISTORICAL ASSOCIATION

1921

157135  
SMITHSONIAN

F116  
.N865

OFFICERS 1920

**NEW YORK STATE HISTORICAL  
ASSOCIATION**

---

President

HON. GEORGE A. BLAUVELT, Monsey

First Vice President

HON. CHARLES MASON DOW, LL.D., Jamestown

Second Vice President

HON. GILBERT D. B. HASBROUCK, LL.D., Kingston

Third Vice President

HON. FRANK H. SEVERANCE, L.H.D., Buffalo

Corresponding Secretary

JAMES SULLIVAN, PH.D., Albany

Recording Secretary and Treasurer

FREDERICK B. RICHARDS, Glens Falls

---

**OFFICERS 1921**

President

HON. GEORGE A. BLAUVELT, Monsey

First Vice President

\*HON. CHARLES MASON DOW, LL.D., Jamestown

Second Vice President

HON. GILBERT D. B. HASBROUCK, LL.D., Kingston

Third Vice President

HON. FRANK H. SEVERANCE, L.H.D., Buffalo

Secretary-Treasurer

FREDERICK B. RICHARDS, Glens Falls

Corresponding Secretary

JAMES SULLIVAN, PH.D., Albany

\*Deceased.

## TRUSTEES

1920

Mr. Walter C. Anthony	Newburgh	Term expires	1920
Hon. G. D. B. Hasbrouck	Kingston	" "	1920
Mr. Francis W. Halsey	New York	" "	1920
Frank H. Severance, L.H.D.	Buffalo	" "	1920
Dr. William O. Stillman	Albany	" "	1920
James Sullivan, Ph.D.	Albany	" "	1920
Col. John W. Vrooman, LL.D.	Herkimer	" "	1920
Sherman Williams, Pd.D.	Glens Falls	" "	1920
Hon. De Alva S. Alexander, LL.D.	Buffalo	" "	1921
Hon. George A. Blauvelt	Monsey	" "	1921
Rev. John H. Brandow, M.A.	Albany	" "	1921
Dr. William A. E. Cummings	Ticonderoga	" "	1921
Charles Mason Dow, LL.D.	Jamestown	" "	1921
*Rev. Henry M. MacCracken, D.D., LL.D.	New York	" "	1921
Hon. Stuyvesant Fish	New York	" "	1921
Charles Henry Hull, Ph.D.	Ithaca	" "	1921
John H. Finley, LL.D.	Albany	" "	1922
James G. Riggs, Pd. D.	Oswego	" "	1922
Hon. Alphonso T. Clearwater, LL.D.	Kingston	" "	1922
Hon. James A. Roberts, LL.D.	New York	" "	1922
George K. Hawkins, D.Sc.	Plattsburgh	" "	1922
Miss Mary H. Haldane	Cold Spring	" "	1922
Dixon Ryan Fox, Ph.D.	New York	" "	1922
Mr. Frederick B. Richards	Glens Falls	" "	1922
Raymond G. Dann	Rochester	" "	1922

## TRUSTEES

1921

---

Hon. DeAlva S. Alexander, LL.D.	Buffalo	"	"	1921
Hon. George A. Blauvelt	Monsey	"	"	1921
Rev. John H. Brandow, M.A.	Albany	"	"	1921
Dr. William A. E. Cummings	Ticonderoga	"	"	1921
Charles Henry Hull, Ph.D.	Ithaca	"	"	1921
*Charles Mason Dow, LL.D.	Jamestown	"	"	1921
*Rev. Henry M. MacCracken, D.D., LL.D.	New York	"	"	1921
Hon. Stuyvesant Fish	New York	"	"	1921
John H. Finley, LL.D.	Albany	"	"	1922
James G. Riggs, Pd.D.	Oswego	"	"	1922
Hon. Alphonso T. Clearwater, LL.D.	Kingston	"	"	1922
Hon. James A. Roberts, LL.D.	New York	"	"	1922
Raymond G. Dann	Rochester	"	"	1922
George K. Hawkins, D.Sc.	Plattsburgh	"	"	1922
Miss Mary H. Haldane	Cold Spring	"	"	1922
Dixon Ryan Fox, Ph.D.	New York	"	"	1922
Mr. Frederick B. Richards	Glens Falls	"	"	1922
Hon. G. D. B. Hasbrouck	Kingston	"	"	1923
Frank H. Severance, L.H.D.	Buffalo	"	"	1923
Dr. William O. Stillman	Albany	"	"	1923
James Sullivan Ph.D.	Albany	"	"	1923
Col. John W. Vrooman, LL.D.	Herkimer	"	"	1923
Sherman Williams, Pd.D.	Glens Falls	"	"	1923
Mr. Myron F. Westover	Schenectady	"	"	1923
Mrs. Charlotte A. Pitcher	Utica	"	"	1923

\*Deceased.

## STANDING COMMITTEES

For 1920-1921

---

### PROGRAM

George A. Blauvelt	Sherman Williams	Dixon Ryan Fox
	James Sullivan	

### LEGISLATION

Frank B. Gilbert	Stewart MacFarland	John W. Vrooman
	President, ex-officio	

### MARKING HISTORIC SPOTS

James Sullivan	Edward F. Foreman	Robert Bruce
Miss Mary H. Haldane		President, ex-officio
	Mrs. George M. Van Duzer	

### PUBLICATION

James Sullivan	Dixon Ryan Fox	Frederick B. Richards
----------------	----------------	-----------------------

### RESOLUTIONS

D. S. Alexander	James A. Roberts	G. D. B. Hasbrouck
-----------------	------------------	--------------------

### NECROLOGY

George A. Ingalls	Stuyvesant Fish	John H. Brandow
	Frederick B. Richards	

### AUDITING

Charles F. West	Robert C. Carter
-----------------	------------------

### LAKE GEORGE BATTLEGROUND PARK

James Sullivan	George Foster Peabody
Charles F. West	Elmer J. West      State Architect, ex-officio



#### **CROWN POINT RESERVATION**

Rev. C. C. St. Clare	Berne E. Pyrke	Walter C. Witherbee
George C. Foote		State Architect, ex-officio

#### **BENNINGTON BATTLEGROUND PARK**

James Sullivan	Stephen H. P. Pell	Stewart MacFarland
----------------	--------------------	--------------------

#### **MEMBERSHIP**

Mrs. Charlotte A. Pitcher, with power to choose her associates.

#### **COMMITTEE TO SECURE APPROPRIATIONS FROM LEGISLATURE FOR QUARTERLY**

George A. Blauvelt	Dixon Ryan Fox	James Sullivan
	Frank B. Gilbert	

---

#### **STANDING COMMITTEES** For 1921-1922

##### **PROGRAM**

Gilbert D. B. Hasbrouck	James Sullivan	Dixon Ryan Fox
-------------------------	----------------	----------------

##### **LEGISLATION**

Frank B. Gilbert	Stewart MacFarland	John W. Vrooman
	President, ex-officio	

##### **MARKING HISTORIC SPOTS**

James Sullivan	Edward R. Foreman	Robert Bruce
Miss Mary H. Haldane		Mrs. George M. VanDuzer
	President ex-officio	

##### **PUBLICATION**

James Sullivan	Dixon Ryan Fox	Frederick B. Richards
----------------	----------------	-----------------------

#### RESOLUTIONS

D. S. Alexander

James A. Roberts

#### NECROLOGY

George A. Ingalls

Stuyvesant Fish

Frederick B. Richards

#### AUDITING

Charles F. West

Robert C. Carter

#### LAKE GEORGE BATTLEGROUND PARK

James Sullivan

George Foster Peabody

Charles F. West

Elmer J. West

State Architect, ex-officio

#### CROWN POINT RESERVATION

Rev. C. C. St. Clare

Berne E. Pyrke

Walter C. Witherbee

George C. Foote

State Architect, ex-officio

#### BENNINGTON BATTLEGROUND PARK

James Sullivan

Stephen H. P. Pell

Stewart MacFarland

#### MEMBERSHIP

Mrs. Charlotte A. Pitcher, with power to choose her associates.

#### COMMITTEE TO SECURE APPROPRIATIONS FROM LEGISLATURE FOR QUARTERLY

George A. Blauvelt

Dixon Ryan Fox  
Frank B. Gilbert

James Sullivan

## TABLE OF CONTENTS

---

Meeting of the New York State Historical Association at Bear Mountain . . . . .	1
New Members . . . . .	17
Bear Mountain . . . . . George D. Blauvelt	20
Some Historical Aspects of Relief in New York State . . . . . Homer Folks	33
Reviews of Books . . . . .	47
Chapin, <i>Greenwich Village</i> ; N. Y. Life Insurance Company, <i>Nylic War Stories</i>	
Notes and Queries . . . . .	49
Sectionalism in Writing History . . . . . James Sullivan	73
The Origins of Prison Reform in New York State . . . . . Harry E. Barnes	89
The Schoolmaster's Lot at New Paltz . . . . . A. J. F. van Laer	100
Reviews of Books . . . . .	105
Harrison, <i>Yates County in the World War</i> ; Peterson, <i>Lest We Forget</i> ; Eberlin, <i>History of the 311th Infantry</i> ; Anon, <i>History of the 307th Field Artillery</i> ; Reppy, <i>Rainbow Memories</i> ; Bach and Hall, <i>The 4th Division</i> ; Riggs and Platt, <i>A History of Battery F. 323d Field Artillery</i> ; Duffy, <i>The G. P. F. Book</i> ; Sullivan and Tucker, <i>History of the 105th Regiment of Engineers</i> ; Mather, <i>History of the 322nd Field Artillery</i> ; Robinson, <i>Forging the Sword</i> ; Bennell, <i>The Yankee Division</i> ; Taylor, <i>New England in France</i> .	
Notes and Queries . . . . .	113
Notice . . . . .	129
Statement . . . . .	140
Revolutionary Camps of the Hudson Highlands . . . . . W. S. Thomas	141
The Calvinist Mind in America . . . . . Dixon R. Fox	156
The Town of Dover on Staten Island . . . . . George W. Tuttle	164
The Huguenots—The First Settlers in the Province of New York, Ralph LeFevre	177
Obituaries . . . . . By George A. Ingalls	186
Reviews of Books . . . . .	195
Donaldson, <i>A History of the Adirondacks</i> ; Cunningham, <i>Three Years with the Adirondack Regiment</i> ; Sullivan, <i>With the Yanks in France</i> ; Williams, <i>American Catholics in the War</i> .	
Notes and Queries . . . . .	199
The Administration of Benjamin Fletcher in New York . . . . . Alice Davis	213
Joseph Avery's Journal, 1799 . . . . . S. D. VanAlstine	251
Obituaries . . . . . By George A. Ingalls	267
Reviews of Books . . . . .	269
Davis, <i>History of the New York Times</i> ; Ross and Slaughter, <i>With the 351st in France</i> ; ———, <i>Hickox's Army</i> ; Bailey, <i>Influences Toward Radicalism in Connecticut, 1754–1775</i>	
Notes and Queries . . . . .	272
Statement . . . . .	281



## LIST OF ILLUSTRATIONS AND MAPS

The Landing Place at Bear Mountain . . . . .	1
Bear Mountain Inn . . . . .	17
View from the Inn Looking East . . . . .	73
View from the Inn Looking South . . . . .	89
Tracing of the O'Connor Map Hempstead Huts . . . . .	141
Excavations at Hempstead Huts . . . . .	141
An Abandoned Road in the Highlands . . . . .	157
Soldiers' Button Found in the Highland . . . . .	157
Map of the Town of Dover . . . . .	173
View from the Dining Room at Bear Mountain Inn . . . . .	199
Fire Place in the Meeting Room at Bear Mountain Inn . . . . .	213
Looking North towards Bear Mountain Inn . . . . .	229
View in Palisades Park . . . . .	245



1019 Jan

# The Quarterly Journal

of the

## New York State Historical Association



Volume II

January 1921

Number 1

Entered as second class mail matter October 22, 1919, at the Post Office at Albany, New York,  
under the Act of August 24, 1912.

# NEW YORK STATE HISTORICAL ASSOCIATION

## Quarterly Journal

### Editorial Committee

JAMES SULLIVAN, Managing Editor

DIXON R. FOX

FREDERICK B. RICHARDS

---

---

## CONTENTS

THE MEETING OF THE NEW YORK STATE HISTORICAL ASSOCIATION AT BEAR MOUNTAIN	- - - -	1
BEAR MOUNTAIN	- - - - - G. A. Blauvelt	20
SOME HISTORICAL ASPECTS OF RELIEF IN NEW YORK STATE	- - - - - Homer Folks	33
REVIEWS OF BOOKS	- - - - -	47
Chapin, <i>Greenwich Village</i> ; N. Y. Life Insurance Company, <i>Nylic War Stories</i>		
NOTES AND QUERIES	- - - - -	49

---

---

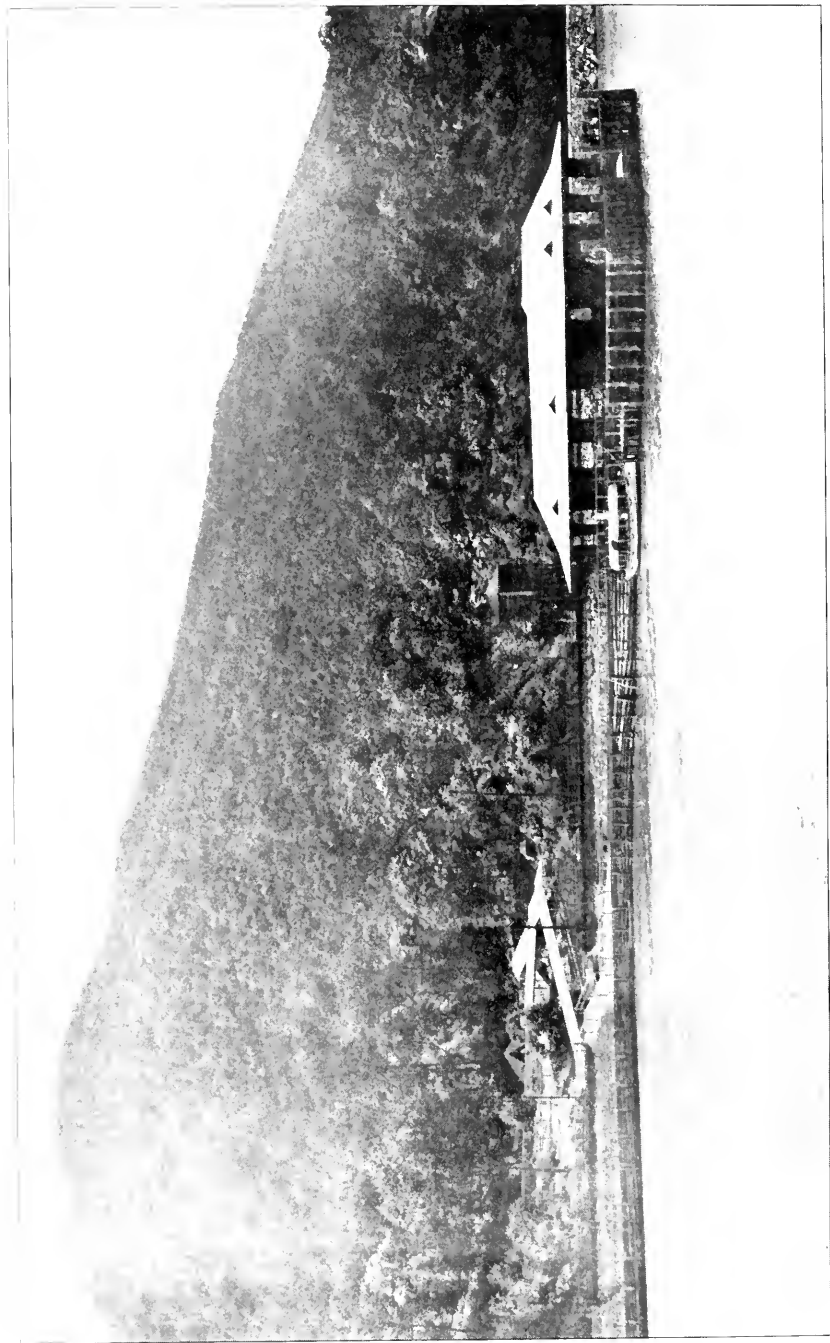
Subscription Price \$1.50

Single Numbers 40 cents

Address all contributions and communications to  
New York State Historical Association, Albany







The Landing Place at Bear Mountain.

---

# The Quarterly Journal

of the New York State Historical Association

---

## THE MEETING OF NEW YORK STATE HISTORICAL ASSOCIATION AT BEAR MOUNTAIN

To President Blauvelt is due the credit of one of the most successful and enjoyable of our annual meetings. The first plan was to charter the "Berkshire" and to duplicate the joys of the West Point meeting of 1915, but this finally had to be given up on account of our inability to make satisfactory arrangements with the Navigation Company. So much time had been wasted, however, in ineffectual endeavor that it looked as if the meeting would have to be abandoned altogether when our President conceived the plan which proved such a success.

To appreciate the long chances that he took those who have never been to Bear Mountain Inn should know that the place is simply ideal in every particular—location, scenery, beautiful building, hall for meetings and food—except sleeping accommodation for guests. How could one expect two hundred historians, most of them at an age of discretion which demands room with bath, to camp out for two nights and to survive the deep seated grouch which would ensue? It was a toss up whether the privations of primitive sleeping quarters would be taken as a joke and add to the fun or everyone depart the first day in a dudgeon. The President had faith in the good fellowship of the historians and won out. Our quarters were a row of cells about 6 x 8, usually

occupied by the help. An iron cot, one chair and a small table were the furnishings, but everything was scrupulously clean and airy. Several large wash rooms some for men and others for women, served for sections of the dormitories. The overflow of unattached men were bunked in a log camp a half mile away in the woods, and a dozen couples were quartered in a hotel five miles away. All ate, however, at the Inn.

The grand test came after the first night and the conversation in the men's wash room the next morning was rich. Sherman Williams who had been one of the campers said, "I am not much of a judge of music, but if I were going to make a statement I should say that they didn't snore in harmony last night." The State Historian was not disturbed because he slept out under the trees. A distinguished Albanian who seemed to be bubbling over with joy was asked why he was so happy and replied, "Because I'm so darn glad the night is over." And so it went. The proverbial good humor of the average Yankee came to the surface, the sun shone and the weather was ideal, the breakfast was good and the discomforts of the night only served to put everyone on common ground and start the era of good fellowship which distinguished this meeting above all others. As was remarked, it was a "family gathering" and in the evening, after the meeting was over and most of the members had retired to their Spartan quarters, some sat round the big fire place and told stories until the "wee sma" hours of the morning. No attempt has been made to describe the formal sessions as the program has already been seen by all and the papers will appear in the *QUARTERLY*. It is enough here to say that they were of the usual high character and were enjoyed by all. The main purpose of this sketch is simply to preserve in print that part of the meeting which would otherwise be lost. It was a great meeting.

The formal program was opened by an invocation by Reverend A. L. Longley. E. L. Partridge then welcomed the delegates to the Park and continued in these words:

"When you realize that the first movement toward the creation of this Park was begun by the late Mr. George W. Perkins, only twenty years ago, and, that within fifteen of those years the wonderful Palisades passed from private ownership to the public control of New Jersey and New York,—never to be marred by the hand

of man, through their length of fourteen miles;—when you are told that only ten years ago the generous gift of Mrs. Edward H. Harriman, of ten thousand acres and \$1,000,000, in memory of her husband who loved the Highlands, stimulated the activities of purchase and development in this region where you are, until 36,000 acres are now under use in behalf of the health and amusement of a great and appreciative public, you can well understand that we have made a beginning. I must note that about half of the funds required for this has come from generous private givers. At this time you will see the beginning only,—what seems to us ‘so little done, so much to do.’

An unpaid Commission, composed of men who love the Highlands of the Hudson River, has expended much time, thought and effort upon this proposition, and well know that the accomplishment of all that we know to be practical and possible is still far away. Yet this beginning has advanced so rapidly, and generous appreciation on the part of the public has been so lavish, that we are frightened over what is expected of us. We want better facilities for the care of the rapidly increasing attendance here. More individuals have visited this park in each of the last two years than the sum total of those visiting all of the national parks of the United States. We desire a suitable restoration of the grounds of the Forts Clinton and Montgomery, the only two situations of actual fighting upon the Hudson river during the period of the American Revolution. Re-forestation of this whole region is essential to its beauty and usefulness. This requires time, and labor which is scarce. For one hundred years or more, the timber while young has been cut down and fed to the brick yards, with no thought of replanting. A great forest should be here. This should be a bird and game refuge, which is an advantage to the sportsman upon adjoining land. An arboretum, for interest and educational advantage, which would show all that could grow between sea level, hence the Hudson River, and the summit of Bear Mountain, an Alpine situation, could not be better placed than here. We have the land.

I could add much more to my list. Just here, I might repeat a little story told me by Mr. Charles Schwab. It is à propos of prospering citizens who have accumulated fortunes, and who desire to give generously for the public good, but sometimes find

difficulty in deciding what to do with their accumulated wealth. Mr. Schwab related that several years ago, he found himself, for business reasons, obliged to be at the Bethlehem Steel works much of the time through the summer, and took his residence out of that city, where half an hours ride into the city by train was required of him each morning.

From a farm house, every morning, as the train was passing, a large dog rushed out and chased the train for as long as his legs and breath held out. Then giving up the chase, he returned home. This took place with most of the trains. One morning Mr. Schwab remarked to the conductor, 'I wonder what is in the back of that dog's head. What is his purpose? He never catches this train, yet he perseveres in trying to do so.' The conductor replied, 'I don't know, Mr. Schwab, but I am wondering what he would do with it if he did catch it.'

Now if any person present knows any one who is looking, with charitable impulse, to find a place for a wise and philanthropic development, please refer him to us. Nothing could be more suitable to perpetuate his name in connection with worthy use of his money than, for instance, the development of an arboretum in a place where the land would be given him, under the protection of this Park.

If this suggestion fails to appeal to him, I can offer others. The Park in relation to recreation has commanded our chief attention thus far. The moment, as has been well said, that recreation is recognized as a legitimate forest utility, the way is opened for the most intelligent administration of great forests. Outdoor recreation is a necessity of civilized life, and civilization, in its growth, makes keener the demand. Recreation is a required utility of high value in every community. No better illustration could be afforded of the application of this principal than is seen in the work of the Palisades Interstate Park, where 70,000 campers enjoyed, during the past summer, periods of ten to fourteen days of camp life. Conservation is in the air. Conservation is of the utmost importance as applied to the minds and bodies of young, human beings. Nothing will help more toward healthy minds than acquaintance with the 'open.'

I have spoken too much on the subject of the Park, I fear, but I know you possess a natural interest toward an understanding of that to which you are welcomed.

The Commissioners of the Palisades Interstate Park welcome you most heartily."

The printed program was as follows:

*First Session*

Wednesday evening, October 6th, 8:30 to 10:30.

Invocation, Rev. A. L. Longley, rector Grace Episcopal Church, Nyack.

Address of Welcome to Delegates, Dr. Edward L. Partridge, a commissioner of Palisades Interstate Park.

Response, Hon. Gilbert D. B. Hasbrouck, second vice president Kingston.

Address, "Bear Mountain," Hon. George A. Blauvelt, Monsey.

Address, "Some Historic Aspects of Relief in New York," Hon. Homer Folks, New York.

Address, "Local Buildings of the Revolutionary Period," Morris Crawford, Nyack.

*Second Session*

Thursday, Oct. 7th, 10 a. m. to 12 m.

Invocation, Rev. George H. Bonsall, pastor Central Presbyterian Church, Haverstraw.

Address, "The Origins of Prison Reform in New York State," Harry E. Barnes, Ph.D., Clark University, Worcester, Mass.

Address, Rev. Frederick John Foakes-Jackson, D.D., Cambridge University.

Address, "Sectionalism in Writing History," James Sullivan, Ph.D., State Historian, Albany.

Address, "The Huguenots, the First Settlers in the Province of New York," Mr. Ralph LeFevre, New Paltz.

The afternoon of Thursday was devoted to a tour of the Palisades Interstate Park and the Stony Point Reservation.

*Third Session*

Thursday, Oct. 7th, 8:30 to 10:30 p. m.

Address, "Revolutionary Camps in the Hudson Highlands," Dr. William S. Thomas, New York.

Address, "The Calvinistic Mind in America," Dixon Ryan Fox, Ph.D., Columbia University.

"A Park Movie," Major William A. Welch, general manager Palisades Interstate Park.

The business session was held on Friday, October 8th, from 9:30 to 11 a. m.

## 6 NEW YORK STATE HISTORICAL ASSOCIATION

### MINUTES

The semi-annual meeting of the TRUSTEES of the New York State Historical Association was held in the office of the State Historian, Albany, at 2 P. M., Tuesday, January 27, 1920.

Present—Messrs. George A. Blauvelt, John H. Brandow, W. A. E. Cummings, William O. Stillman, and Frederick B. Richards.

The Treasurer read his semi-annual statement.

Upon motion, *Resolved* that the Treasurer's report be accepted and placed on file.

Upon motion, *Resolved* that the reading of the minutes of the previous meeting be dispensed with.

Upon motion, *Resolved* that if after investigation by the Publication Committee, it was found that the finances of the Association would stand the expense, that both the QUARTERLY and the bound Annual volume which is to be made up of material contained in the Quarterlies with the addition of such matter as may be chosen by the Publication Committee, be sent to all the members of the Association.

Upon motion, *Resolved* that the Association make its annual contribution of Fifty Dollars (\$50.00) to Dr. J. F. Jameson to assist in the publication of the annual bibliography entitled "Writings on American History", prepared under the supervision of Dr. Jameson by Miss Grace C. Griffin of the Library of Congress.

Upon motion, *Resolved* that the Association accept with thanks the offer made by Mrs. May E. Stillman who was born in New York State but at present living at Chula Vista, California, of a deed executed in 1761, given to one Captain Randall Rice by Colonel John Henry Lydius for a piece of land about fifteen miles eastward of Crown Point.

A letter was read from Dixon Ryan Fox suggesting that we elect Charles Henry Hull, Ph.D. of Cornell University, as a Trustee of



the Association. As this suggestion had the warm approval of President Blauvelt, it was upon motion unanimously *Resolved* that Dr. Hull be elected a Trustee of the New York State Historical Association in place of Brigadier General Charles L. Davis, U.S.A., deceased.

The following letter was read by the Secretary:

“COMMISSIONERS OF THE PALISADES INTERSTATE PARK,  
61 BROADWAY, NEW YORK CITY,  
January 26, 1920.

New York State Historical Association,

New York City.

Gentlemen:

The Commissioners of the Palisades Interstate Park invite the New York State Historical Association to hold its next annual meeting at Bear Mountain, which is located in the Palisades Park a few miles south of West Point.

Bear Mountain is immediately contiguous to Forts Clinton and Montgomery and was the scene of many stirring Revolutionary incidents. It is easily accessible by rail and by boat and there are ample docking facilities for river steamers.

Bear Mountain Inn is a most attractive place for the holding of your sessions and, while rooming accommodations cannot be provided, meals can be served at reasonable prices. The Palisades Park with its twenty-five thousand acres of land, its lakes and its drives, will afford splendid opportunity for recreation and pleasure.

We sincerely hope that you will hold your next meeting in the Palisades Park.

(Signed) Very truly yours,  
W. A. WELCH,  
General Manager.”

It was the sense of the meeting that if practical, the Berkshire be chartered and an annual meeting similar to the one at West Point be held off Bear Mountain Park. It was suggested that a letter accompany the annual bills which this year will go out about February 1st, asking for a vote by the members of the Association on this plan so that the Trustees could form an opinion as to the practicability of the same.

Upon motion, *Resolved* that a committee of five of which the President be one, be appointed by the Chair with power to make

## 8 NEW YORK STATE HISTORICAL ASSOCIATION

arrangements for the annual meeting. The President appointed Messrs. Williams, Cummings, Sullivan and Richards as the four remaining members of the committee.

Upon motion, the meeting adjourned.

FREDERICK B. RICHARDS,  
Secretary.

The BUSINESS MEETING of the New York State Historical Association was held at 9:30 A. M., October 8, 1920.

The meeting was called to order with President Blauvelt in the Chair.

Upon motion, *Resolved* that the reading of the minutes of the previous meeting be dispensed with.

The following reports were read and ordered placed on file. (See reports on the QUARTERLY, Lake George, Crown Point, Treasurer, submitted herewith.)

Upon motion, *Resolved*, that the Association continue publishing the QUARTERLY magazine.

Upon motion *Resolved* that the Association bind the four QUARTERLIES of the year into an annual volume for such members of the Association as may wish the same.

Upon motion, *Resolved* that the President be authorized to appoint a special committee, of which he shall be Chairman, for the purpose of securing an appropriation from the Legislature for the publication of the QUARTERLY magazines of the New York State Historical Association under the direction of the Education Department.

The President appointed Dixon Ryan Fox, James Sullivan and Frank B. Gilbert.

Upon motion, the following resolution was unanimously carried:

Whereas the success of this annual meeting of the New York State Historical Association held at Bear Mountain Inn has been largely due to the completeness and painstaking care with which arrangements were made and the welcome and warm spirit of cordiality with which we were received and entertained, now be it

*Resolved*, that this Association express its appreciation and gratitude to Mr. and Mrs. Daschner for their thoughtfulness and many courtesies.

Upon motion, it was *Resolved* that the Association spread upon its minutes an appreciation of George W. Perkins, to be prepared by Dr. Fox.

Dr. Williams then took the floor and after commenting on the exceeding success of the meeting which was just about to end and congratulating President Blauvelt on the excellence of the plans for the meeting which had worked out so well, also wished to express his appreciation of the work of President Blauvelt's secretary, Miss Antoinette Wilson, who had so ably carried out the plans made by the President. His sentiments were unanimously endorsed by the members present.

Upon motion, it was *Resolved* that the Chair appoint a committee of three to petition the Governor of the State to appoint a Committee of three of which the State Historian was to be chairman, to pass upon the merits of any portraits which are to be hung in the special historical room at the State Capitol. The Chairman appointed Edgar C. Leonard, Sherman Williams, and John H. Finley as such committee.

Upon motion, it was *Resolved* that the New York State Historical Association heartily favor and endorse the purchase of the historical Freeman farm, constituting the Battle field of the Battle of Saratoga, by the State of New York, so that this historical landmark of the Revolutionary Battle, which resulted in the defeat, retreat and surrender of Burgoyne, may be preserved for the benefit of the people.

The Secretary announced that two old deeds had been received and passed over to the State Historian for safe keeping, one which

belonged to the estate of Grenville M. Ingalsbe and was presented to the society by Miss Mary C. Lawler, and the other, a deed dated 1761, was presented by Mrs. May E. Stillman of Chula Vista, California.

Upon motion, *Resolved* that a committee consisting of Dr. Fox and the Secretary send a circular letter to all the members of the Association requesting them to send originals or copies of any valuable papers which they might possess.

Upon motion, *Resolved* that the expenses of entertaining guests approximating \$50.00 and such gratuities as President Blauvelt thought best, be paid by the Association.

The following list of new members was read and confirmed: (See list submitted.)

Upon motion, *Resolved* that the Secretary cast one ballot for the election of the following Trustees of the Association for a term of three years: Gilbert D. B. Hasbrouck, Frank H. Severance, Dr. William O. Stillman, James Sullivan, John W. Vrooman, Sherman Williams, Myron F. Westover and Mrs. Charlotte A. Pitcher.

Upon motion, *Resolved* that Major General Sir Charles V. F. Townshend, C.V.O., of England, be elected an Honorary Member of the Association.

Upon motion, *Resolved* that General John J. Pershing, U.S.A., be elected an Honorary Member of the Association.

Invitations for the annual meeting of 1921 were extended by Buffalo, Brooklyn, etc.

Upon motion, *Resolved* that the place of the next annual meeting be left to the Program Committee with power.

Mrs. Pitcher then took the floor and gave a talk on securing new

members, which talk she emphasized by her handing the Secretary two applications which she had secured.

There being no further business, the meeting adjourned.

FREDERICK B. RICHARDS,  
Secretary.

A meeting of the TRUSTEES of the New York State Historical Association was held following the Business meeting of the society, October 8, 1920.

There were present—George A. Blauvelt, John W. Vrooman, Sherman Williams, Dixon Ryan Fox, Miss Mary H. Haldane, Mrs. Charlotte A. Pitcher, and Frederick B. Richards.

President Blauvelt in the chair.

Upon motion, it was *Resolved* that the Secretary cast one ballot for the re-election of the following officers:

George A. Blauvelt, president; Charles Mason Dow, first vice-president; Gilbert D. B. Hasbrouck, second vice-president; Frank H. Severance, third vice-president; James Sullivan, corresponding secretary; Frederick B. Richards, recording secretary and treasurer.

The Secretary cast one ballot and declared the above officers elected.

Upon motion the meeting adjourned.

FREDERICK B. RICHARDS,  
Secretary.

# FINANCIAL STATEMENT

October 6, 1919 to October 4, 1920

## *Receipts*

Cash on hand Oct. 6, 1919 . . . . .	\$2,193.67	
Gift from Charles M. Dow . . . . .	130.00	
Received from Annual Dues . . . . .	1,799.30	
Received from Book Sales . . . . .	46.77	
Received from Interest on Investments . . .	123.95	
	<hr/>	\$4,293.69

## 12 NEW YORK STATE HISTORICAL ASSOCIATION

### *Disbursements*

Proceedings .....	\$75.00	
Magazines .....	1,247.25	
Printing, postage, office expense, etc .....	349.55	
Bibliography American History .....	50.00	
	<hr/>	\$1,721.80
Cash on hand, October 4, 1920.....		\$2,571.89

### *Liabilities*

None

### LIFE MEMBERSHIP FUND

#### *Receipts*

Cash on hand Oct. 6, 1919.....	\$54.34	
Interest .....	.62	
New Members.....	270.00	
	<hr/>	\$324.96

#### *Disbursements*

War Savings Stamps.....	\$ 95.00	
	<hr/>	
Balance on hand in Savings Account ..		\$229.96

### INVESTMENT ACCOUNT

Huntington Land & Imp. Co. Bonds .....	\$200.00	
United Kingdom of Gr. Britain & Ireland ..	1,000.00	
1st Liberty Loan, converted.....	100.00	
2d Liberty Loan, converted.....	150.00	
4th Liberty Loan, converted.....	100.00	
5th Liberty Loan, converted.....	150.00	
War Savings Stamps.....	60.00	
War Savings Stamps since Oct. 6, 1919....	95.00	
	<hr/>	\$1,855.00

### STATE PARKS

#### *Receipts*

From New York State Comptroller, since Oct. 6, 1919	\$3,441.61
---	------------

*Disbursements*

Crown Point Reservation.....	\$1,759.02	
Lake George Battleground Park.....	1,407.59	
Bennington Battleground Park.....	275.00	
	<hr/>	\$3,441.61

## REPORT ON THE QUARTERLY JOURNAL

This item needs very little attention on the part of the association except from the point of view of its continuance. It has been possible through this medium to publish all of the proceedings of the Rochester meeting and when the October number appears these will have been printed for the year 1919. It is the intention of the editors to include with the October number such other material as usually appears in the annual volume. It is also intended, provided the finances of the Association permit, to include an announcement to the effect that such members who desire to have their volumes bound may do so by sending them to the binder who has been chosen for this purpose in Albany. It will thus be possible to have the bound volumes on the shelves in the same way as heretofore. The only question now that arises is whether we wish to continue this method or undertake some other plan.

JAMES SULLIVAN.

## REPORT CONCERNING THE COMMITTEES ON THE BATTLEFIELD PARKS

*Bennington Battlefield.* For the year 1920-21 the legislature granted for the Bennington Battlefield \$275 for the caretaker and \$500 for repairs to the house. The caretaker at present is Mr. Frank L. Stevens of North Hoosick. He and a representative of the State Architect in the spring of the year made a visit to the battlefield for the purpose of seeing to the repairs that were needed in the farm house which is on the property. For the coming year larger appropriations have been asked for in order to take care of the fences which are nearly all down so that the cattle of the neighboring farms wander over onto the State park. Attempts on the part of Mr. Stevens to get the abutting farmers to put up their parts of the fences have not been successful.

The committee in charge of this battleground seemingly needs reorganization. Many of the members who have been written to

have not paid any attention to the letters sent. An unexpended appropriation of \$10,000 for the improvement of the park and the building of roads has never been utilized and it is seemingly impossible to get any people in the locality interested in this very historic park. Success along these lines must either be obtained or it would seem to the speaker to be necessary for the association to give up trying to be the custodian of this battlefield. Certainly were the facts which are laid down here to become known to the general public it would be felt that we as an association had not been careful in the fulfillment of our duties.

*Crown Point Reservation.* The legislature appropriated for the Crown Point Reservation for the year 1920-21: \$900 for the superintendent, \$600 for the expenses of maintenance and operation, and \$1000 for repairs. The same sums have been asked for for the coming year. Larger amounts would have been requested but the delay in getting in the requests from the committee was such as to make it impossible to get the necessary clerical work done before the time expired for getting such requests before the Finance Committee of the Legislature.

Judge Pyrke, as was reported last year, has resigned as chairman of the committee in charge of this reservation and has been succeeded by the Rev. C. C. St. Clare of Port Henry. Mr. St. Clare is very much interested in the work and has got into close touch with the superintendent, Mr. Charles W. Saunders, who has written to him a very detailed report showing the necessity of the erection of a house for the caretaker and for the appropriation of considerable sums for the restoration of Fort Frederick. For the year after next it is hoped to get sufficient funds appropriated to carry out some of these suggestions.

*Lake George Battleground.* The legislature appropriated for this park for the year 1920-1921: \$275 for the caretaker, \$1180 for expenses of maintenance and operation including general repairs, and \$1000 for repairs to Fort George. Considerable increases have been asked for similar purposes for the coming year.

Mr. Stewart MacFarland, who succeeded Mr. Seeley, as the caretaker of this park, is also a member of the Assembly and has undertaken his work with a great deal of zeal. He has done so much in the way of clearing up the park and in making it presentable for



public view and for the use of the public that it is impossible to enumerate all of the details here. It is hoped to do a great many more things in this park, particularly towards the restoration of that part of Fort George which has for many years been in such a sad state of disrepair.

JAMES SULLIVAN.

#### CROWN POINT RESERVATION

In compliance with a request to write a report of the activities and improvements of the Crown Point Reservation, I am pleased to report a very busy and successful season. That the Reservation is growing in popularity is evidenced by the number of people that have visited here this season up to September 30, 14,652 by actual count. The Reservation is fast becoming a mecca for small parties in automobiles and in yachts who are out for a day of sport and actual enjoyment. The grand old ruins with the natural scenic beauty of the place make this an ideal spot to spend such a day. The number of visitors is largely made up of automobile tourists. Cars from nearly every state in the union have visited here the past season and we hear nothing but praise—words of admiration and words of commendation for the work already done. We wish that the work of excavating and repair may go on until the entire ruins have been repaired and preserved in the manner which is so much admired by all visitors to the Reservation.

On account of the excessive cost of labor and the almost impossibility of getting labor at any price, the work on the Reservation so far this season has been confined to the improvement of the grounds. We have added considerable new lawn, have improved the walks and drives and have removed a great deal of brush and foul growth from the ramparts of the English Fort (Fort Crown Point). I but repeat the universal expression of all visitors when I say the grounds never looked so well and the Forts were never in so good condition as at the present time.

It would add greatly to the attractions of the Forts if a liberal appropriation could be secured for the express purpose of excavating the ruins of the Citadel, the Tower and Chapel at the French Fort, which were destroyed by the explosion of the powder magazine when the Fort was destroyed September 9th, 1758.

CHAS. W. SAUNDERS,  
Superintendent.

## LAKE GEORGE BATTLEGROUND

Much has been accomplished during the last two seasons in the Lake George Battle Ground Park. Work was begun by cutting out the dense undergrowth and brush, revealing a tract of great natural beauty. Next roads were laid out, making three entrances to the park, one past the monument, and all leading to the Fort. About three-quarters of a mile of road has been finished so far. A walk of crushed stone has been laid from the monument to the fort, passing the lime kiln, quarries, and breastworks. Signs have been erected throughout the Park noting the sites of historic interest. A sign was also placed near the main highway where the road branches off leading to the Fort.

The Fort itself has been cleared of all brush so one can easily see the construction of crude masonry and the outline and general plan of the fortifications. Recently the work of excavating was begun in the interior of the Fort, getting down in one room to the floor which is bed rock. In removing the earth many hand made nails and parts of locks and keys were found.

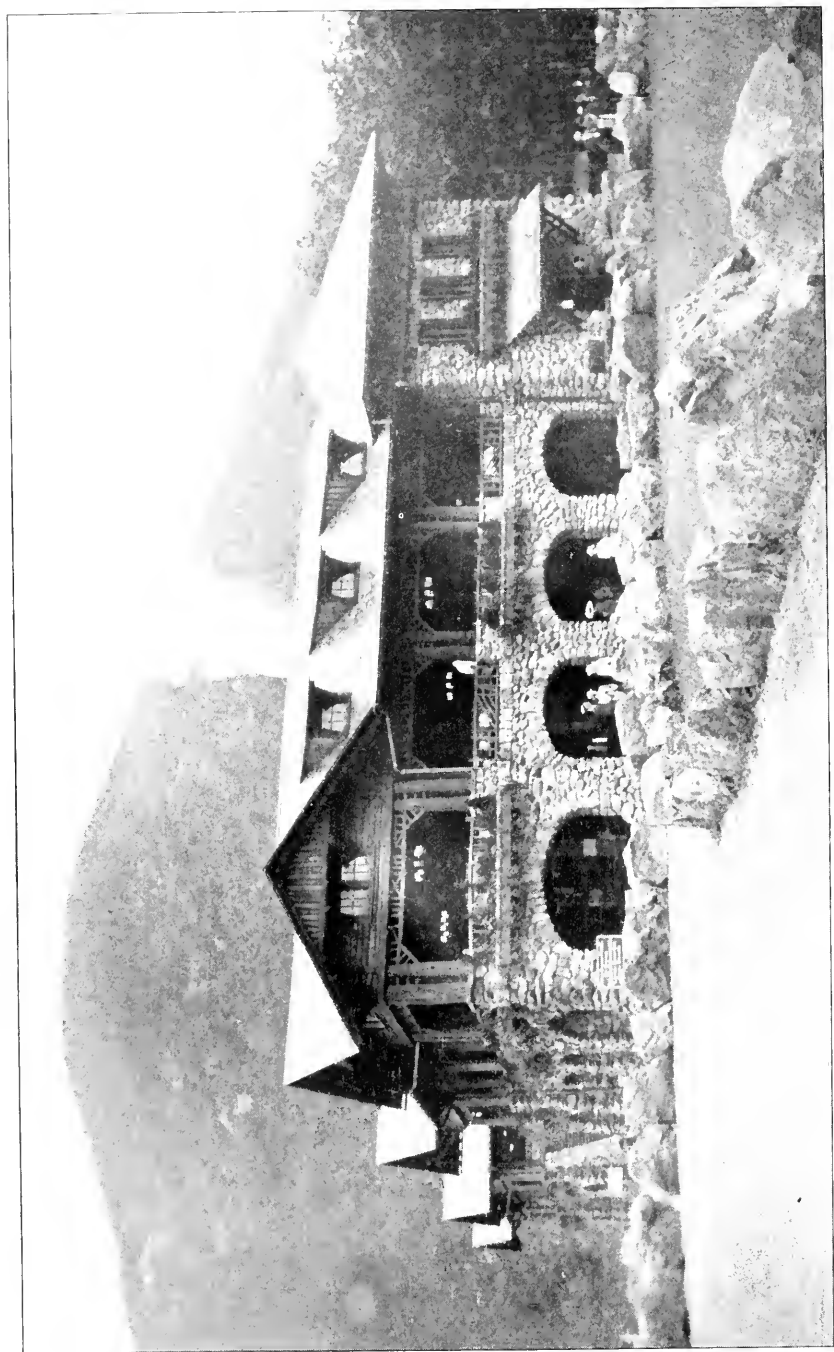
For the convenience of tourists and visitors the water pipes have been extended about 450 feet, bringing the water up to the pavilion. Four permanent fireplaces of stone and cement have been built near the pavilion, two large enough for clam bake ovens, the others with grills for the accommodation of smaller picnic parties. The floor of the pavilion, originally planned for an auditorium, has been levelled making it convenient for tables or dancing. A new ice house has been built which will be an added convenience for parties desiring ice. Cans for the reception of papers and waste are distributed throughout the grounds.

The installation of electric lights has proven very popular. In addition to the lights in the pavilion and along the road and walk leading to the Fort there is a 400 watt shower light focused on the Fort, showing the interior and surroundings as clearly as in daylight. The Monument, standing under a 20 watt light, is plainly visible for a long distance, adding one more attraction to this very beautiful and delightfully interesting Park.

The number of visitors increases steadily, the register showing guests from near and far. Many picnics have been held there this season by local organizations and a pleasant spirit of cooperation and interest is manifested by all who enjoy the hospitality of the Lake George Park.

STEWART MACFARLAND, Caretaker.





Bear Mountain Inn - Our Meeting Place, 1920.

## NEW MEMBERS

October 10, 1919 to October 6, 1920

*Active Members*

Adams, William P.	Red Hook, N. Y. (Dutchess Co.).
Albertson, Charles L.	Waverly, N. Y.
Austin, Franklin D.	Barneveld, N. Y. (Oneida Co.).
Bonham, Milledge L., Jr.	Clinton, N. Y.
Bross, Mrs. William R., Sr.	P. O. Box 167, Babylon, N. Y.
Chadbourne, Mrs. E. C.	Stone Ridge, N. Y. (Ulster Co.).
Chitty, Miss Marion A.	Glens Falls, N. Y.
Cleveland Public Library.	Cleveland, Ohio.
Cowing, Miss Janet McKay	24 East Bayard St., Seneca Falls, N. Y.
Cox, Miss Meda,	Wyoming, N. Y.
Dann, Raymond G.	125 Main St. East, Rochester, N. Y.
DeLano, Mrs. Clayton H.	Ticonderoga, N. Y.
Dexter, Rev. William Hart	Tuscarora, N. Y.
Dougherty, Rev. James T.	Canandaigua, N. Y.
Dutchess County Historical Soc.	c/o John C. Sickley, Sec'y, Poughkeepsie, N. Y.
Greene, Nelson	633 West 148th St., New York, N. Y.
Haswell, John C.	P. O. Box 980, Dayton, Ohio.
Hotchkiss, Thomas W.	2411 Grand Ave., New York, N. Y.
Hutchens, William C.	Johnstown, N. Y.
Knox, James E.	601 S. William St., Johnstown, N. Y.
LaMotte, Miss Ellen N.	Stone Ridge, N. Y. (Ulster Co.).
Larrowe, Mrs. Kathrine M.	Cohocton, N. Y. (Steuben Co.).
Markham, William Guy	Avon, N. Y.
Montgomery, Lyman E.	216 Union St., Schenectady, N. Y.

18 *NEW YORK STATE HISTORICAL ASSOCIATION*

- Prescott, Miss Clara A. 14 East Miller St., Newark, N. Y.  
 Parker, Mrs. Edwina A. 221 W. Main St., Frankfort, N. Y.
- Redfield, Nelson M. 925 Fidelity Bldg., Buffalo, N. Y.  
 Remington, Harvey F. 911 Wilder Building, Rochester, N. Y.  
 Robbins Mrs. Kittie C. R. 176 Main St., Oneida, N. Y.  
 Robinson, Mrs. Douglas Henderson House, Mohawk, N. Y.  
 Robinson, Theodore Douglas Mohawk, N. Y.  
 Robinson, Mrs. Theodore Douglas Mohawk, N. Y.  
 Roche, Mrs. Spencer Summerfield 840 N. Broadway, Saratoga Springs, N. Y.
- Root, Edward W. 1302 18th St., Washington, D. C.  
 Rossetter, Asher Bellerose, Queens Co., N. Y.
- Schenck, Miss Alice A. 303 North St., Fulton, N. Y.  
 Sherwood, Mrs. Jeannette Benton 79 Railroad St., Cortland, N. Y.
- Shanklin, Mrs. Gertrude Avery Wyoming, N. Y.  
 Seabury, John Alden 124 Pulaski St., Brooklyn, N. Y.  
 Snyder, Mrs. Minnie F. 52 Prospect St., Newark, N. Y.  
 Stevens, Arthur F. P. O. Box 13, Ramapo, N. Y.  
 Starbuck, Miss Kathryn H. 527 Fifth Ave., New York, N. Y.  
 Sweet, Dr. Halbert D. Glens Falls, N. Y.
- Trumbull, Sidney E. 5 S. William St., Johnstown, N. Y.  
 Trumbull, Mrs. Sidney E. 5 S. William St., Johnstown, N. Y.
- Vail, R. W. G., Librarian. Minnesota Hist. Soc., St. Paul, Minn.  
 Van Duzer, Mrs. George M. Warwick, N. Y.  
 Van Hoevenberg, Miss Alma Rogers 79 West 102 St., New York, N. Y.
- Waldron, William G. Amsterdam, N. Y.  
 Webber, Richard 30 Hamilton Ave., New Rochelle, N. Y.  
 Welch, Miss Jane Meade 76 Johnson Park, Buffalo, N. Y.

*Life Members*

Ward, Hamilton      104 Erie Co., Bank Building, Buffalo, N. Y.

Transferred from Active List to Life Membership

Allen, Freeman, H, Ph.D.      Hamilton, N. Y.

Arthur, L. Louise      515 Lexington Ave., New York, N. Y.

Asmus, Grover E.      4011 Hudson Boulevard, N. Bergen, N. J.

Banker, Albert M.      Johnstown, N. Y.

Dayton, Mrs. J. J.      Corinth, N. Y.

Hanson, Willis T. Jr.,      20 Union Ave., Schenectady, N. Y.

Hyde, Louis Fiske      Glens Falls, N. Y.

Kemble, Gouverneur      Cold Spring, N. Y.

## BEAR MOUNTAIN (1)

On October 6, 1777, one hundred and forty-three years ago, almost to the hour, a battle was being fought on this very spot between the American forces stationed at the Highland fortifications of Clinton and Montgomery, and a detachment of the British army under command of Sir Henry Clinton.

The British objective was the capture of Forts Clinton and Montgomery and the destruction of the boom and chain which had been placed across the Hudson from Fort Montgomery to Anthony's Nose to prevent the cooperation of the British army at the south with that at the North.

The engagement began early in the afternoon and lasted well on into the evening. Numerically the struggle was an unequal one, though, time after time, the small body of American troops repulsed the superior forces of the enemy and drove them back in the direction of Haverstraw. Late in the evening, however, they retired from the forts and made their escape in the direction of West Point.

The areas occupied by these two fortifications are within the boundaries of the Palisades Interstate Park and less than half a mile from the Inn, the one, that of Fort Montgomery being on the steep river bank on the north side of Poplopen Creek, and the other, that of Fort Clinton on the south side. Both are opposite Anthony's Nose on the east side of the river.

These three bold promontories are only a short distance north of the southerly portal of the Highlands. Their value as places of fortification to block the plans of the British Ministry to gain control of the navigation of the Hudson was early recognized by the Provincial Congress of New York. In the spring of 1775 that body called the attention of the Continental Congress to the importance of maintaining possession of the river. No action was taken, however, until shortly after George Clinton, fresh from the Provincial Convention, took his seat on May 15, 1775, as a member of the Continental Congress. It was doubtless he who stimulated that body to pass on May 25, 1775, a resolution:

(1) Delivered before the New York State Historical Association, Bear Mountain, Oct. 6, 1920.



“ That a post be also taken in the Highlands on each side of Hudson's River and batteries erected in such manner as will most effectually prevent any vessels passing that may be sent to harrass the inhabitants on the borders of said river; and that experienced persons be immediately sent to examine said river in order to discover where it will be most advisable and proper to obstruct the navigation.”

Five days later the Provincial Congress of New York appointed Colonel Clinton and Mr. Christopher Tappen a committee to view the banks of the Hudson River in the Highlands and report the location of suitable sites for erecting one or more fortifications. The Committee reported June 13, 1775, and recommended the construction of the fortification afterwards known as Fort Constitution opposite West Point and Forts Clinton and Montgomery opposite Anthony's Nose.

The committee at the same time advised the Provincial Congress that they were informed that “ by means of four or five booms, chained together on one side of the river, ready to be drawn across, the passage can be closed up to prevent any vessel passing or repassing.”

On August 18, 1775, the Provincial Congress directed the immediate construction of the fortifications under the direction of a special committee then appointed. Colonel Bernard Romans was selected to prepare plans and specifications for the works. Owing, however, to a bitter controversy between Colonel Romans and the committee relative to the plans for the fort on Constitution Island, the construction of Forts Clinton and Montgomery was seriously delayed for some months; and it was not until the spring of 1776 that the work was actually undertaken.

In the meantime, and because of the controversy, the Provincial Congress appointed a new committee, and removed Colonel Romans, designating Colonel Smith as his successor. The new committee urged the construction of “a work at Poplopen's Kill which would mount sixteen or eighteen guns, and sweep the river to the point of the Dunderberg, a distance of three miles, and up the river quite as far.”

So serious had the controversy over the construction of the fortifications in the Highlands become that in May, 1776, Washington appointed Brigadier-General Lord Stirling, Colonel Putnam

and Colonel Knox "to see and report such alterations as may be judged necessary for putting" the works in a fit and proper position for defense, because he had reason to think the situation was bad "and the garrison, on account of arms, worse."

Lord Stirling made his report to General Washington under the date of June 1, 1776. Besides outlining, more or less in detail, the progress of the work at Fort Constitution and Fort Montgomery, Lord Stirling pointed out the importance of fortifying the point of land opposite Fort Montgomery on Poplopen Creek which later became the site of Fort Clinton. He said:

"On the top of this point is a level spot of ground, of near an acre, commanded by nothing but the high, inaccessible mountains, at about twelve hundred yards distance; this spot, I think, should by all means be fortified, as well for the annoyance of the enemy in their approach up the river, as for the protection of the works at Fort Montgomery. Indeed, this appears to me the most proper place I have seen on the river to be made the grand post; and, in my opinion, should be a regular strong work, capable of resisting every kind of attack, and of containing a grand magazine of all kinds of warlike stores. The whole would then command the passage of the river with so formidable a cross fire as would deter any attempt to approach with shipping." (*American Archives*, ser. 4, vol. 6, p. 672.)

With the exception of appointing a committee on June 16, 1775, to inquire into the depth of the water in the Hudson River, little action appears to have been taken by the Provincial Congress to meet the suggestion of the Continental Congress of May 25, 1775, relative to obstructing the navigation of the Hudson River until July 16, 1776, a few days after the Declaration of Independence. On that day a secret committee was appointed to "devise and carry into execution such measures as to them shall appear most effectual for obstructing the channel of Hudson's river."

Four points were selected by this committee as places for obstructions. The first was at Fort Washington, the second at Fort Montgomery, the third at Polopel's Island, and the fourth at West Point. The obstructions at Fort Montgomery were constructed in the autumn of 1776 and the spring of 1777. The work was done wholly under the direction of the secret committee.

Several plans for accomplishing the purpose were considered. The plan finally adopted provided for the construction of a chain

eighteen hundred feet long floated by spars or logs framed together, in front of which were anchored frames of timber. Much difficulty was experienced in placing the obstruction. After several failures to anchor the chain and logs the work was finally completed in the latter part of March, 1776; and remained intact until removed by the British.

By September, 1777, Fort Clinton had been completed. Fort Montgomery was still unfinished. The chain and boom were in place. Above the chain had been stationed two frigates, two galleys and an armed sloop. The forts, however, were weakly garrisoned. Some of the troops had been sent to reinforce the armies on the Delaware and in the North. Not a few had gone home to harvest the summer crops.

George Clinton, who had been commissioned a Brigadier-General in the Continental Army in March and chosen Governor of New York in July, was in command of the Highlands on the west side of the river with headquarters at Fort Montgomery. His brother, Colonel James Clinton, was in command at Fort Clinton. The combined garrison at the two forts did not exceed six hundred men, mainly militia. Across the river at Peekskill General Putnam had only twelve hundred troops and four hundred militia.

Such was the situation when, on September 29th, Governor Clinton, then absent from his post in attendance at the sessions of the State Legislature, received a communication from General Putnam to the effect that:

"I have received intelligence on which I can fully depend, that the enemy has received a reinforcement at New York last Thursday, of about three thousand British and foreign troops; that General Clinton has called in guides who belong about Croton River; has ordered hard bread to be baked; that the troops are called from Paulus Hook to King's Bridge, and the whole troops are now under marching orders. I think it highly probable the designs of the enemy are against the posts of the Highlands, or of some part of the counties of Westchester or Dutchess. \* \* \* \* The ships are drawn up in the river, and I believe nothing prevents them from paying us an immediate visit, but a contrary wind."

The Governor immediately prorogued the Legislature and hastened to Fort Montgomery. In the meantime Sir Henry Clinton had proceeded up the river and had landed troops at Tarry-

town. This was evidently a feint to keep Putnam on his side of the river for, after marching a few miles through the country, the troops were re-embarked and, during the afternoon of October 5th, were landed at Verplanck's Point.

Putnam, thinking that Clinton was going to attack him at Peekskill, fell back in the rear of that village and called upon Governor Clinton for reinforcements.

Having thus taken care of Putnam, Sir Henry, under cover of a thick fog, crossed at King's Ferry with two thousand men to the west side of the river, leaving four hundred men at Verplanck's Point on the east side to thwart Putnam.

Sir Henry then, conducted by a Troy guide, set out in the direction of Forts Clinton and Montgomery. He followed the course of a narrow road through the pass in the rear of Dunderberg, coming out in sight of the river on the north side of this mountain some little distance south of the junction of the Doodletown Road with the state highway. Proceeding northerly to the junction of these two roads, a few hundred yards south of this place, the main body was divided into two columns,—one under the command of Sir John Vaughn with twelve hundred men, and the other under the command of Lieutenant-Colonel Campbell with five hundred regulars and four hundred loyalist Americans, the latter being commanded by Colonel Beverly Robinson. Colonel Campbell made a detour around Bear Mountain so as to come in on the right flank and in the rear of Fort Montgomery. Vaughn followed the course of the present state highway in order to strike Fort Clinton on the right flank and in the rear.

Governor Clinton kept himself fully advised as to the movements of the enemy. He sent a messenger to Putnam asking for reinforcements when it became apparent that Sir Henry Clinton's real objective was an attack upon him and not upon Putnam.

On Saturday afternoon, October 5th, he sent one hundred men under the command of Major Logan across the Dunderberg to watch the British. After receiving a report that Sir Henry with about forty boats filled with men had crossed the river a few miles to the south, he sent the next morning a reconnoitering party of twenty-eight men under the command of Lieutenant Jackson. Two or three miles below they fell in with a concealed party of the enemy who ordered them to surrender. Lieutenant Jackson

made no answer, but fired on his foes and then hastily retreated back to Fort Clinton without the loss of a man.

Sir Henry Clinton timed the departure of his two columns so that both the forts should be attacked simultaneously. General Vaughn with his battalion met with persistent opposition on the way to Fort Clinton. About where the southerly pavilion is located, less than a hundred yards north of the Inn, the strip of land between the river and Highland Lake, otherwise known as Hessian Pond, then known as Lake Sinnipink, had been fortified by an abatis. Throughout the afternoon a gallant resistance was here made to Vaughn's advance by Colonel Brown with one hundred men. About four o'clock, however, the American troops were forced to retire to the Fort. The loss on both sides was considerable.

Colonel Campbell found equal resistance to his effort to attack Fort Montgomery in the rear. Coming out of the rugged defile around Bear Mountain, he was met by the discharge of a field piece which during the day had been stationed by Governor Clinton on the knoll on the south side of the road leading to the Forest of Dean mines, a short distance west of the fort. With it were stationed one hundred and twenty American troops in two parties. The field piece burst late in the afternoon and our men were forced to retire within the breastworks, after having inflicted heavy losses on the enemy.

About five o'clock in the afternoon Governor Clinton was summoned to surrender within five minutes in order to prevent further loss of life. Not knowing that the messenger he had sent to General Putnam had turned traitor and deserted to the enemy, and still hoping for reinforcements, George Clinton promptly refused.

Almost immediately thereafter a general attack began upon the forts. The British vessels moved up the river and opened fire on both the forts and the vessels anchored above the chain. The attack was resisted on every hand with obstinate spirit. Night was fast approaching. In the growing darkness, midst the sharp rattling of the musketry and the flash and roar of the heavy cannonnade, echoing and re-echoing back and forth through the mountains, the small body of patriots defended their positions like heroes and with a valor unexcelled throughout the war. From

time to time they repulsed the enemy and drove them without the breastworks with heavy slaughter. Colonel Campbell was killed while leading his men in the attack upon Fort Montgomery. Count Grabowski, the Polish aid-de-camp to Sir Henry Clinton, received his death wound in the storming of Fort Clinton.

At least half of the American troops were killed, wounded or missing. Some were slain, some taken prisoners. With numbers steadily diminishing, exhausted from continual duty and unremitting exertion, brave to the last, the survivors fought their way out and away from the fort as best they could, for they would not surrender.

James Clinton narrowly averted death from a bayonet thrust which penetrated a garrison orderly book which he carried in his pocket. Among the last to leave Fort Clinton, he ran down the steep bank and made his escape across the Poplopen. The Governor, who was at Fort Montgomery, plunged over the breastworks and down the bank to the river where he found a boat just pulling out with a party of escaping soldiers. He was safely conducted by them to the other side, and before midnight he was with Putnam at Continental Village.

The frigates and galleys, which had been stationed above the boom and chain, had gallantly returned the fire of the British vessels throughout the engagement. With the evacuation of the forts, however, they attempted to make their escape up the river; but when escape seemed no longer possible the crews set fire to the vessels and hastened ashore. "As every sail was set, the vessels were soon 'magnificent pyramids of fire'; the surrounding mountains were lit up by the glare, and a train of ruddy light gleamed along the river. They were in a part of the Highlands famous for its echoes; as the flames gradually reached the loaded cannon, their thundering reports were multiplied and prolonged along the rocky shores. The vessels at length blew up with tremendous explosions, and all again was darkness."

Timothy Dwight, then a chaplain in the army and later president of Yale College, visited the forts the following spring in the company of several officers from West Point. "The first object," he said, "which met our eyes, after we left our barge and ascended the bank, was the remains of a fire kindled by the cottagers of this solitude, for the purpose of consuming the bones of some of

the Americans who had fallen at this place, and had been left unburied. Some of these bones were lying partially consumed around the spot where the fire had been kindled; and some had evidently been converted into ashes. As we went onward, we were distressed by the odor of decayed human bodies. To me this was a novelty; and more overwhelming and dispiriting than I am able to describe. As we were attempting to discover the source from which it proceeded, we found, at a small distance from Fort Montgomery, a pond of moderate size, in which we saw the bodies of several men, who had been killed in the assault upon the fort. They were thrown into this pond, the preceding autumn, by the British, when probably the water was sufficiently deep to cover them. Some of them were covered at this time; but by a depth so small, as to leave them distinctly visible. . . . The clothes which they wore when they were killed, were still on them, and proved that they were militia, being the ordinary dress of farmers. Their faces were bloated and monstrous; and their postures were uncouth, distorted and in the highest degree afflictive."

And again he said: "We proceeded to find the grave of Count Grabowski, a Polish nobleman, who was killed in the assault, while acting as aid-de-camp to the British commander. The spot was pointed out to us by Lieutenant-Colonel Livingston, who saw him fall, and informed us that he was buried in the place where he was killed. Here we found a grave—in all probability, that in which he was buried—without a 'stone' to 'tell where he lay,' and now forgotten and undiscoverable; a humiliating termination of a restless, vain, ambitious life."

Though Forts Clinton and Montgomery fell into the hands of the enemy, their construction and defense were justified in the light of contemporaneous events. Partly unfinished as they were, and weakly garrisoned, they and the obstructions in the river served long enough to keep Sir Henry Clinton in New York awaiting reinforcements before attempting to join Burgoyne in the north. Even the two or three days' delay attending his preparation for and attack upon the forts was sufficient; for Burgoyne, to whom Clinton had pledged support, could wait no longer. The battle of Saratoga was fought October seventh. Burgoyne surrendered to Gates. Clinton returned to New York after reaching Esopus, and a great crisis of the Revolution was over.

The Almighty was ever kind when He gave us the Highlands of the Hudson,—when He made this beautiful valley, banking it on either side by lofty mountains and covering it with a carpet of rich colors. But how much more so was He when He opened the gates and let in the waters of our majestic river! Wonderful as was His handiwork, it seems to me that here at the gateway He emphasized His power of creation, for in no other place are the mountains so high; in no other place are the colors so rich; in no other place do the waters of the river lap the banks so peacefully in the sunshine of summer or so tempestuously during the storms of winter. We think that this rural paradise is unequalled among the wonders of the world.

Here Henry Hudson halted to wonder at the magnificence of the creation. Here, so Diedrich Knickerbocker tells us, came Peter Stuyvesant to feed on the products of the river and to write indelibly on the face of the mountain across the river the name of that trusty squire of his—Antony Van Corlaer. Here too have come the nature lovers of the world to gaze with awe upon its beauty and to sound its praises in every country and in every clime.

Before the year 1775 the neighborhood basked in almost primitive solitude interrupted only by the whoop of the Indians, the crack of the gun of the solitary hunter, and the thunderous vengeance of the innumerable imps who inhabited the Dunderberg. After the Revolution its primitiveness was restored for nearly a century and a quarter. It was cut off from the march of civilization by the almost impenetrable barriers which Nature had provided. Its solitude was again undisturbed except for the whistles of the boats on the river and the axes of the woodsmen who had supplanted the Indians and made for themselves homes, here and there in the mountain.

Its beauty remained unmarred down to the year 1906, when the State of New York decided to build a prison on the site of the playground just in front of the Inn. Soon came prisoners in stripes with axes and hammers to desecrate and destroy this handiwork of the Almighty. So sacrilegious was it that even the dauntless Peter Stuyvesant must have turned over in his grave. The nose of Antony must have taken on a redder hue. Certain it is that the inhabitants of the Dunderberg and the neighboring mountains



voiced their protest so loudly up and down the river and over the state that the Legislature was compelled to reverse itself, and in the year 1910 the paradise was turned over to the care of George W. Perkins.

Mr. Perkins was president of the Commissioners of the Palisades Interstate Park. That Commission had been created in 1900 by Chapter 170 of the laws of that year. A similar commission had been created the same year in the State of New Jersey. Mr. Perkins was a member of the New Jersey Commission as well as that of New York. The two commissions were created as a result of the activities of certain civic bodies, among others being the American Scenic and Historic Preservation Society, to prevent the defacement of the lower Palisades opposite New York where a number of quarries were in operation.

In 1895 a commission, of which Mr. Andrew H. Green was chairman, had been appointed by the New York Legislature to inquire into and report upon the destruction of the Palisades. The commission reported to the Legislatures of the two states and recommended the creation of two commissions to act jointly for the purpose of preventing the further destruction of the Palisades in both states and thereby to preserve their scenic beauty. Power was given to acquire land for the purpose and for the further purpose of creating one single park in the two states for the use and enjoyment of the people.

The jurisdiction of the New Jersey Commission extended from Fort Lee northerly to the New York State Line. The jurisdiction of the New York Commission extended from the dividing line between the states as far north as Piermont Creek in Rockland County. In 1906 its jurisdiction was extended as far north as Stony Point in order to stop the blasting of the large quarries in the Rockland Lake section. Its jurisdiction was again extended in 1910 as far north as the City of Newburgh and westerly into the Ramapos so as to include the Highland section.

There are in theory two commissions, one in New York and one in New Jersey. Each is composed of ten members appointed by the governor and confirmed by the senate of each of the respective states. Of the ten members of each commission five must be residents and five may be non-residents of the state of appointment. In making the appointments the governor of each state

has recognized the interstate objective and has appointed as non-resident members the resident-members of the Commission in the other state. So, for all practical purposes, the two bodies constitute one joint interstate commission.

From the very beginning until his death a few weeks ago the creative mind of the joint commission was that of M.: Perkins, though joined with him on the board were men of high attainments. So intimately was he connected with its many activities and so much was he a part of its very existence that one cannot now think of the Palisades Interstate Park without feeling that in its entirety there is typified the vigorous personality of Mr. Perkins.

With growing optimism, he begged munificent gifts for the enterprise from private donors. He secured large appropriations from State Legislatures for its extension and improvement. He gave liberally of his own both in money and in time, and he lived to see the completion of much of the work to which he had dedicated himself.

He stopped the blasting on the lower Palisades by the acquisition of its twelve mile face in New Jersey, from highwater mark to the top of the steep cliffs, the title to which land is now held by the New Jersey Commission in trust for the people of that state.

He carved miles and miles of trails along the face of the cliffs. He built a road almost at the water's edge. He constructed beaches, erected recreation pavilions and bath houses, laid out picnic and camping sites, provided boats and secured ferries so that the great metropolitan population might find healthful recreation and pleasure.

The difficulties attending the construction period were not obstacles to him. If a road was needed from the water's edge up the steep cliffs to the top—and two of them were so needed—they were built almost as by magic. Acres and acres of land under water were filled to make beaches and places for roads and pavilions.

At an expense of nearly four millions of dollars, he acquired the title to the river front from Upper Nyack to the Haverstraw line, in order to stop blasting by the many quarries which had seriously scarred the west bank of the river.

It was not, however, until the establishment of the Harriman Park section in the Highlands that his genius found greatest play.

In the year 1909 Mrs. Mary A. Harriman offered to give 10,000 acres of land in the Highlands adjacent to Bear Mountain and \$1,000,000 to establish a public park. Following closely after the many protests against the construction of a state prison at Bear Mountain, the magnificent offer of Mrs. Harriman was accepted.

Mr. Hughes was governor at the time. The problem which confronted him and the Legislature was the creation of a state agency to administer the trust. Mr. Perkins was consulted, with the result that the jurisdiction of the Palisades Interstate Park was extended so as to include the Highland section of the west bank of the river. The gift of Mrs. Harriman was accepted by Chapter 362 of the laws of 1910, and the property was turned over to the Palisades Interstate Park Commission. At the same time the prison site was placed under the care of the Commission for park purposes. Power was given to acquire additional land. With the 10,000 acres constituting the Harriman gift, the prison site, and the subsequently acquired lands, the Commission now holds in **trust** for the people of the State of New York approximately 35,000 acres.

Much money was needed for the creation of a park at this place. Mr. Perkins offered to secure from private donors \$2,500,000 for the use of the Commission, provided the state would contribute a like amount. The Legislature submitted the proposition to a vote of the people in 1910, and the people of this state cheerfully gave an additional \$2,500,000. A similar proposal was made by Mr. Perkins in 1916. Again he raised \$2,500,000 and again the people of the state voted a like amount.

During the years following 1910 the progress of the work was rapid. Lands were acquired; lake after lake was built; miles and miles of beautiful roads and trails were constructed; camp sites were laid out; storehouses were erected and stocked; and dead timber was removed and trees planted. Here were constructed the Inn and playgrounds. On the river a large dock was built for the landing of boats. And these works which I have recited are but a few of the many activities undertaken by the Commission.

It is estimated that thus far this season more than 1,250,000 people have visited the Inn and the various sections of the Park. Back in the mountains were thousands and thousands of campers.

Represented among them were organizations of the Boy Scouts, Y. M. C. A., boys from parochial schools, and others too numerous to mention. More than a million people have been served with refreshments at the Inn.

All this and more was due to the masterful genius of Mr. Perkins. Major Welch, the General Manager of the Park, with his matchless engineering ability, carried on the work under the direction of Mr. Perkins.

They labored and toiled winter and summer, year in and year out, to make the Palisades Interstate Park the greatest playground in the world. Annually more people visit it than visit in the aggregate all of the National Parks in the country.

During the last year of his life Mr. Perkins secured a large donation for the purchase and reconstruction of the "Onteora" and "Clermont", night boats in the service of the Catskill Evening Line, in order to make the Park more accessible to the people of the City of New York. These boats were in service at the time of his death, and it is estimated that they have carried on the average two thousand people daily to and from Bear Mountain.

Each time I visit the Park I seem to see something new suggestive of the presence of Mr. Perkins. I came here on a bright Sunday afternoon early in September. I was unusually impressed with the serenity of the day and the joyousness of the people. As I looked out from the Inn in the late afternoon, I could see groups of people still lingering on the playgrounds. Here and there on the lakes were slowly moving boats. The Day Line steamer, glistening in the sunshine, was just leaving the dock laden with homegoing visitors to the Park. As the lowering sun disappeared behind Bear Mountain, it cast a shadow over all that I saw and over and upon the side of Anthony's Nose. It seemed then to me that God Almighty was blessing the work of His servant, the great public benefactor, George W. Perkins.

GEORGE A. BLAUVELT.

## SOME HISTORICAL ASPECTS OF RELIEF IN NEW YORK STATE (I)

I have no adequate qualifications to deal with the early history of poor relief and poor law institutions in New York State, although many interesting things may be learned from the records that have come down to us. Some of the very earliest of the statutes of New Netherland show that the poor were already with the Dutch Fathers. In 1641 we find an order of the director and council of New Netherland fining persons who circulated unpolished wampum at too high a value " 10 guilders for the use of the poor." By the same authority, goats found " this side of Fresh Water " were to be " seized and forfeited for the behoof and profit of the poor " and one-third of the fines for firing guns on New Year's day or for planting May poles on May Day was appropriated to the use of the poor.

In Albany, as early as 1665, the account book of the deacons of the Reformed Protestant Dutch Church shows, there was an " armen huys " or poor house in that place. One of the entries in this very interesting account book shows that the burial of the poor, then as now, was an opportunity for " honest graft." It reads: " On the 15th of February, Ryseck, widow of Gerrit Swart, the last of the church poor, died and was buried on the 17th, the onkosten of which was as follows: 3 dry boards for the coffin 7:10;  $\frac{3}{4}$  lb. nails, 1:10; making the coffin 24 guilders; cartage 10 stivers; a half vat and an anker of good beer, 27 guilders; 1 gal. rum, 21 guilders; 6 gal. Madeira for women and men, 84 guilders; sugar and cruyery, 5 guilders; 150 sugar cakes, 15 guilders; tobacco and pipes 4:10; Hendrick Roseboom dood-graver 30 guilders; use of the pall 12 guilders; total 232 guilders (\$92.80). A claim of Roseboom of 12 guilders for inviting to the funeral was paid, but it was regarded as an extortionate charge, and the consistory ordered that the doodgraver should thereafter have from the deacons 30 guilders and no more, for like services."

We know, likewise, that in the year 1736, a " publick workhouse and house of correction " was opened in the City of New York on

(1) Delivered before the New York Historical Association at Bear Mountain on Oct. 6, 1920.

a parcel of land then far uptown and known as "the vineyard," now known to us as City Hall Park. A great institution this workhouse of young New York was—it fulfilled all the functions of all the diversified institutions now existing for the care of paupers, insane and criminals of all types and classes. It was especially provided that the superintendent of this institution might receive such additional perquisites of office as could be obtained by boarding and whipping unruly slaves at current rates.

I reflect, however, that history relates not only to the more distant past but to all the time which has elapsed to the present, including the present. I am fairly well acquainted with what has actually taken place in relation to relief in this State since 1893, and in order to understand existing laws and institutions, I have endeavored to acquaint myself so far as I might from time to time, with their origin and development. It has occurred to me that it may be of interest to consider to what degree the plans, agencies, and principles embodied in the earlier forms of the poor law and its administration have undergone change. So far as these aspects of organized society are concerned, has this State led an irresponsible life, turning from one principle and one mechanism to another with the shifting currents of public opinion, or, has it been lethargic, too indisposed to change? Has the thing which *is*, too little or too great momentum? Are we changing too easily, or with too great difficulty? Is the presumption in legislation and administration in favor of the thing which is, in comparison with the thing which somebody says ought to be, too strong, or not strong enough? With no particular inclination to interpret the data one way or another, and with no previous opinions on the subject, we shall trace briefly the development of relief from this viewpoint.

In the early years, means of communication and of travel were so slight that the different communities, almost of necessity, had their separate agencies for the administration of relief, both outdoor and institutional. There was no central supervision. As time passed, improved methods of communication and travel made possible the administration of any given function of government over wider and wider areas from a single administrative center, permitting a greater degree of supervision and uniformity, and the application of technical knowledge and the results of experience.

The principal relief agency in the beginning was the church. The poor were largely supported from voluntary contributions collected at the church services. The first general order dealing directly with the administration of poor relief in this State was promulgated by the director general and council of New Netherland and bears the date of October 22, 1661. The order provided that where there were no ministers, the magistrates were to appoint two persons "who shall go round every Sunday with a little bag among the congregation and collect the Alms for the support of the Poor of that place, and then if they fall short, they shall address themselves in the manner as above set forth to the Deacons of this City (New Amsterdam)." It is to be noted that the secular authorities were already coming to the aid of the church. Thus the principle of public relief was creeping in. By the year 1683 it became firmly established. A comprehensive poor law enacted in this year for the first time clearly enunciated the principle "that for the time to come the respective Commissioners of every County, Citty, Towne, parish Precinct. aforesaid shall make provision for the maintenance support of their poor respectively." The same law also provides for an elaborate system of public taxation "for the Defraying of the publique & necessary charge of each respective Citty, towne and County."

As regards relief in the home, there has been no important general change, so far as I can observe, from those early times to the present, either in the principles or the methods of control, or the geographical units charged with the duty. The public outdoor relief system of the State of New York in 1920 is practically that of 1683. So far as I am aware, there has never been any adequate knowledge or review of its operations. Various local studies have been made by the State and by voluntary associations, and quite recently the State Board of Charities has undertaken a more comprehensive study. To the present, however, the statistics which have been collected in regard to it are perfunctory. They are not interpretive. If we have learned anything about the relief of people in their homes in the course of three centuries since the founding of the first Dutch colony, we have not brought it together into any defined form as the result of experience,—far less have we enacted any legislation or devised any machinery to carry it into effect.

There have been local changes of significance. New York City, after struggling more or less intermittently with the abuses that so inevitably attach to outdoor relief, gave up the job and finally discontinued outdoor relief altogether in 1876, except the giving of coal to those in distress. It appears to have been given up actually because of the difficulty of doing it on any other than a political basis. There does not seem to have been any consensus of opinion reached that it was not a good thing or any consideration as to how serious the hardships would be as a result of its discontinuance. The city simply threw up its hands on account of its inability to do such a constantly troublesome job any longer. In Brooklyn outdoor relief was discontinued in 1879 because of a technical decision to the effect that the public authorities actually had no legal right to give such relief in that area. Elsewhere in the State there have been timid and faint suggestions from time to time looking toward a change to a county unit or to a more real and effective control by the county superintendent of the poor, for the purpose of establishing some policy and making some effort to formulate the results of experience and to carry them into effect, but they have come to little. There is indeed opportunity for choice between what is called the town plan and the county plan, but this relates almost wholly to the incidence of taxation for the support of the individual rather than to the process by which he becomes a public charge, or to the machinery by which he is to be cared for. Furthermore, it does not relate to home relief but to institutional care.

The system of so-called "Widows' Pensions," adopted in 1915, which is in effect, though not in name or popular regard, outdoor relief to a special class of dependents, does introduce new factors.—county administration, county support and a clean break with all the existing poor law machinery, so far as the care of dependent children in their own homes by widowed mothers is concerned. One county, Westchester, has recently secured a special statute whereby all forms of public relief are to a degree centralized in the hands of a county commissioner of charities; still the town as a unit of relief retains its overseers of the poor with but slightly diminished functions.

These minor local exceptions, however, are unimportant as compared with the broad general plan and the great volume of



home relief. In its general outlines, in the machinery of administration, in the underlying principles and in the incidence of the cost, the poor law of 1683 has remained substantially unchanged.

While outdoor relief has remained practically unmodified, institutional care has passed through substantial modifications. The local units which had been given authority to grant home relief in 1683, were authorized to establish almshouses one hundred years later by an Act of 1788. This act authorized the erection or purchase of workhouses under the supervision of the overseers of the poor in the cities and towns of the State. If any dependent person refused to be lodged in the workhouse, where such existed, his name was to be "put out of the book," that is, he was to be deprived of outdoor relief. The larger cities and, to some extent, the towns availed themselves of this power.

Thirty-five years later, in 1823, we find four city and eighteen town almshouses distributed as follows:

Albany County:	Orange County:
City of Albany	Goshen
Coeymans	Newburgh
Chautauqua County:	New Windsor
Westfield	Rensselaer County:
Clinton County:	Troy
Plattsburg	Saratoga County
Columbia County:	Ballston
City of Hudson	Halfmoon
Dutchess County:	Milton
Poughkeepsie	Stillwater
Jefferson County:	Schenectady County:
Champion	City of Schenectady
Kings County:	Suffolk County:
Brooklyn	Brookhaven
New York County:	Southhold
City of New York	Westchester County:
	Mount Pleasant
	South Salem

Enter now upon the scene the first great reform spirit and movement. In 1824 Secretary of State J. V. N. Yates made a careful inquiry into the whole subject of poor relief in the State of New

York. This he sets forth in a special report to the Legislature on the relief and settlement of the poor which is in great detail and has every appearance of accuracy and care. Distinguishing two classes of poor, the permanent paupers and the occasional paupers, he finds that of the former, there was one to every 220 of the population, and of the latter, one to every 100. Among the 6,896 permanent paupers, he found 2,604 children under 14 years of age. In the year 1822, he notes, the whole pauper expense of the State amounted to \$470,000, and this amount had almost doubled in the previous seven years.

The report says that in the towns and villages where there were no almshouses, the poor were disposed of by the overseers in one of three ways:

1. Farming out at stipulated prices to contractors.
2. Awarding by auction to the lowest bidder.
3. Outdoor relief.

The evils of these systems are pointed out at great length:

" 1. Our present poor laws lead to litigation of the most expensive and hurtful kind, . . . exhausting nearly one-ninth of the funds intended for relief. . . . The removal of so many human beings like felons for no other fault than poverty seems inconsistent with the spirit of a system professing to be founded on principles of pure benevolence and humanity. . . .

" 2. The poor, when farmed out or sold, are frequently treated with barbarity and neglect by their keepers. More than one instance has stained our judicial records in which it appeared that the pauper had suffered such cruelty and torture from his keeper as to produce untimely dissolution. . . .

" 3. The education and morals of the children of paupers (except in almshouses) are almost wholly neglected. They grow up in filth, idleness, ignorance and disease, and many become early candidates for the prison or the grave. . . .

" 4. There is no adequate provision for the employment of the poor throughout the State and no industrious habit can be effectually inculcated under our present system. . . .

" 5. The poor laws tend to encourage the sturdy beggar and profligate vagrant to become pensioners upon the public funds. . . .

" 6. These laws also hold out encouragement to the successful practice of street beggary.

" 7. Idiots and lunatics do not receive sufficient care and attention in towns where no suitable asylums for their reception are established.

" 8. There is an evident want of economy in the disbursement of the public funds."

The system which Secretary Yates accordingly devised to correct these evils was that of county almshouses. Of this system he says:

" Without professing to believe that its adoption will remove altogether the evils alluded to, (for so long as human frailty and vice prevail, the hope would be vain,) it is presumed that it will remove or ameliorate many of them. And it is also confidently believed, that two prominent features of the proposed system, are entitled to much consideration, to wit: First,—It will relieve the poor with greater humanity, and emphatically with more economy, than under the existing poor laws: And, secondly,—It will provide employment for the idle, and compel them to labor, and of consequence put an end to the practice of street beggary. It is obvious, however, that vigilance, fidelity and intelligence, in the officers to whom the execution of this plan is entrusted, are indispensable to those favorable results."

In the county almshouses, it was proposed by Secretary Yates, that:

" The paupers there (were) to be maintained and employed at the expense of the respective counties in some healthful labor chiefly agricultural; their children (were) to be carefully instructed and at suitable ages to be put out to some useful business or trade " the sick and infirm were to be humanely and scientifically treated; and the various types of public dependents who could not be suitably cared for in their homes were to receive the specialized and thoughtful attention which their various needs required.

This reform was adopted, a county almshouse law was enacted, and all the counties in the State except two in the course of time established county almshouses. Nassau County is still in the pre-1824 stage and clings to its town almshouses. In 1912 the people of the county by referendum vote decided to build a county almshouse in place of the town almshouses, but this decision was never carried into effect by the Board of Supervisors. Schuyler County is in still an earlier stage, being without an almshouse. But the benefits foreseen by Secretary of State Yates were not realized. The children were taught, not by teachers, but by older inmates, the imbeciles, and vagrants, and broken-down women of the streets. The sick were cared for by vagabonds or the convalescent, and, in general, the almshouse became quite assimilated to the type described by Charles Dickens. The remedy of 1824

became the abuse of the fifties and sixties. It is interesting to compare Secretary Yates' criticism of the town almshouse and his hopeful picture of what the county almshouses were to be, with a description of the county almshouses as they were seen by a select committee of the Legislature in 1857, only thirty-three years after the passage of Secretary Yates' reform legislation. The select committee in its report says:-

"The poorhouses throughout the State may be generally described as badly constructed, ill-arranged, ill-warmed, and ill-ventilated. The rooms are crowded with inmates, and the air, particularly in the sleeping apartments, is very noxious, and to casual visitors almost insufferable. In some cases, as many as forty-five inmates occupy a single dormitory, with low ceilings, and sleeping-boxes arranged in three tiers, one above another. Good health is incompatible with such arrangements. They make it an impossibility.

"The want of suitable hospital accommodations is severely felt in most of the poorhouses. The sick, considering their physical condition, are even worse cared for than the healthy. The arrangements for medical attendance are quite inadequate to secure that which is suitable; the physician is poorly paid, and consequently gives only such general attention as his remuneration seems to require. In some cases the inmates sicken and die without any medical attendance whatever. In one county almshouse, averaging 137 inmates, there were thirty-six deaths during the past year, and yet none of them from epidemic or contagious disease. Such a proportion of mortality indicates most inexcusable negligence.

"A proper classification of the inmates is almost wholly neglected. It is either impossible, or when possible, it is disregarded. . . .

"Before passing from the subject of poorhouses, the committee may be allowed to say that it is to be much regretted that our citizens generally manifest so little interest in the condition even of those in their immediate neighborhood. Individuals who take great interest in human suffering whenever it is brought to their notice, never visit them and are entirely uninformed, that in a county house almost at their own doors may be found the lunatic suffering for years in a dark and suffocating cell in summer, and almost freezing in the winter; where a score of children are poorly fed, poorly clothed, and quite untaught; where the poor idiot is half starved and beaten with rods because he is too dull to do his master's bidding; where the aged mother is lying in perhaps her last sickness, unattended by a physician, and with no one to minister to her wants; where the lunatic, and that lunatic, too, a woman,

is made to feel the lash in the hands of a brutal underkeeper; yet these are all to be found; they all exist in our State. And the committee are quite convinced that to this apparent indifference on the part of the citizen may be attributed in a great degree the miserable state to which these houses have fallen; and they would urge upon the benevolent in all parts of the state to look into their condition, and thus assist to make them comfortable abodes for the indigent and the unfortunate."

This moving plea of the legislative committee of 1857 seems prophetic, though it was a long period from that report to the crystallization of volunteer interest in almshouses and other public institutions by the organization of the State Board of Charities, an official but unpaid board, in 1867, and the State Charities Aid Association, an unofficial voluntary organization, in 1872. For whatever changes have occurred in legislation relating to public relief and public institutions and, later, in regard to public health, this organization of volunteer interest and sentiment has been a substantial and, in some important cases, a determining factor.

The condition of the insane in the almshouses was particularly shocking. The same report of 1857, above quoted, says of these unfortunates:

"The treatment of lunatics and idiots in these houses is frequently abusive. The cells and sheds where they are confined are wretched abodes, often wholly unprovided with bedding. In most cases, female lunatics had none but male attendants. Instances were testified to of the whipping of male and female idiots and lunatics and of confining the latter in loathsome cells, and binding them with chains. In one county, where eleven lunatics were confined, six were in chains."

Since 1824 there have been few fundamental changes in the county almshouses as to its legal status and its functions, with two notable exceptions: The establishment of State care of the insane in State hospitals accomplished primarily by the force of voluntary sentiment organized in the State Charities Aid Association, and the removal of dependent children from the almshouses, effected largely through the efforts of the State supervisory body, the State Board of Charities.

It was, in fact, a bit of the statesmanship of Alexander Hamilton appearing in a direct descendant, and working through the State Charities Aid Association, that with clearness of vision and inflexible determination, put through a great centralization of a

particular aspect of almshouse care which had been an especially conspicuous failure, namely, the care of the insane. Both the principles and mechanisms of performing this great phase of public duty were radically transformed in 1890 after 10 years of continuous effort. The function of the care of the insane was transferred bodily, wholly, and unqualifiedly, from local authorities to the State. The mentally sick were no longer kept in pauper institutions. The question who was to support them was no longer of first importance. It yielded in precedence to the question of getting them actually, humanely and scientifically cared for and treated and then collecting from somebody, if practicable, the cost thereof.

As to the other exception,—the care of dependent children—progress so far as legislation is concerned was negative rather than positive. It decreed that dependent children should no longer be sent to almshouses but it did not say where they should go. It left it to the same bewildering array of local officials, towns, cities and counties, to make whatever disposition of them they could, so that we have as many different standards, as many different ways, as many different practices, as there are different local authorities. It would seem that a completely new set of principles should have been worked out long ago on other than a poor law basis for the care of needy children. There is a multitude of statutory provisions relating to children, but, at the point of their becoming a public charge, they are to be dealt with as poor persons. The test is that of pauperism, and the mechanism for their reception and for the determination of their disposition is the local law official with certain exceptions.

Certain other fractions of almshouse population have been taken over partly by the State, but in no instance has the job been done in thoroughgoing fashion, either as a matter of legal principle, or as a matter of administrative policy. After several decades of effort for their removal, the feeble-minded and epileptic are still to be found in almshouses. There is, it is true, a provision which forbids the sending of them there, but it has never been enforced and no provision has ever been made whereby it might be enforced—that is, the State has never provided places to which these classes of dependents might be sent in adequate numbers.

Summing up in regard to the institutional care of the poor, it is evident that there has been little change in the underlying principles but considerable change in the governmental units by which various parts of the poor law functions are to be exercised, tending always to a transition toward larger units, from the towns to the county, or from the county to the State.

Glancing a moment at both home relief and institutional care, it is to be observed that we do not see any series of irresponsible changes forward and backward. It does not present the picture of a jazz dance with much noise and action, but returning periodically to the point of departure. Such degree of change as has been is of a developmental character. The important modifications have been adhered to. So far as the pressure toward change has been yielded to, the results have in every case remained. I do not recall a single important instance in which action once taken has been undone. Whether the change was for better or worse (and I should be disposed to say that all changes had been for the better), there has been no backsliding.

Perhaps an even more striking example of the momentum of a public institution once established is that of the county jail. From early times it has served two utterly dissimilar purposes: first, the safe detention of those who are charged with the commission of an offense until it can be determined whether the persons are guilty or not; second, the detention as punishment of those who have been found guilty of certain offenses. It was a convenience, no doubt, to have one place of detention. It would have cost more to provide a suitable residence in which persons who *perhaps* had committed offenses and were not permitted to go out on bail might be detained until the question of whether they were guilty or not should be determined. To subject persons merely suspected or charged with having committed an offense to exactly the same treatment as persons who have been adjudged to be criminals, is so stupid, callous, wrong-headed, brutal and barbarous, as to be almost unbelievable. Yet this is what almost every county did after the establishment of its county jail and in spite of all the protests and reports, official and otherwise, it is what they continue to do. I do not suppose that any sane person who understands it, has ever approved of it; yet it would be inconvenient and expensive to change it, therefore it goes on.

Turning a moment to the field of voluntary relief, it is interesting to note that in 1818 there was organized a most interesting society, —The Society for the Prevention of Pauperism. This organization, in its studies of social conditions, struck upon many of the fundamental causes of pauperism which were enumerated in the reports of the Society as follows: "Ignorance, idleness, intemperance and drinking, the want of economy, imprudent and hasty marriages, lotteries, pawnbrokers, houses of ill fame, gambling houses, and the numerous charitable institutions of the city." Some of the remedies suggested were: "To divide the city into small districts, each district to have two or three visitors to visit the indigent, etc.; to establish savings banks, benefit societies, life insurances, etc.; to refuse to support paupers who have not gained a settlement; to procure an entire prohibition of street begging; to aid in giving employment to those who cannot procure it, by establishing houses of employment, or by supplying materials for domestic labor; to open places of public worship in the outer wards; to promote Sunday-schools; to devise a plan by which all spontaneous charities may flow into one channel; to procure the abolition of the great number of shops in which spirituous liquors are sold by license."

The purposes of this association read altogether like those of a similar society, The Association for Improving the Condition of the Poor, established a quarter of a century later, and those of the Charity Organization Society, established more than half a century later. Each of them set forth perfectly sound, sensible principles of voluntary relief. The first organization, after a most promising start, observed that one way of preventing pauperism was to take better care of the children who were homeless or exposed to moral dangers, and therefore entered upon a campaign to establish a suitable refuge and shelter for them. It resulted in the founding of the House of Refuge in 1824. The parent organization died in childbirth. This was the beginning and end of a most promising career of what should now be a century of accumulated experience in dealing with voluntary relief in the City of New York. The newest of the new of the proposals which have been made in regard to relief work hardly go far beyond the original prospectus of the original Society for the Prevention of Pauperism.



What is the net impression of these glances at the development of home relief, institutional care, correctional care, and voluntary charity over a period of some two hundred years? At about the time I happened to be outlining this paper, I was engaged in a long delayed perusal of "The Education of Henry Adams" and was wrestling with the closing chapters in which he sets forth his dynamic theory of history. I would not seem to imply that I fully understand his theory. In fact, I think one would need to live for a year or two with this theory, which Mr. Adams evidently slowly evolved over a period of several decades, in order to understand fully its nature and implications. So far as the subjects we have been considering in this paper are concerned, I would even be disposed to discontinue any further effort to understand Mr. Adams' dynamic theory of history, and to look for some equally high authority who should set forth a static theory of history. The impressions left upon my mind are that, as to these forms of community action, the rate of change is so extraordinarily slight, that only a superhuman effort or the fortunate combination of groups of forces or a subtle mind which seeks to create an important change, so-to-speak "unbeknownst," and leaving the older agencies and laws apparently in force, can secure any substantial change. As an instance of the latter method, it might be noted that, while it has been impossible to change the general plan of the jail system, the introduction of the probation system as an alternative for the court, has actually resulted in a situation in which there are more people convicted of offenses at large in the community under supervision and on conditional liberty, than there are in the penal and reformatory institutions. If this had been set forth as a goal, or if this plan had been proposed in any such form, it would never have been adopted. It has grown gradually and it has not undertaken to destroy any other mechanism of society serving a similar purpose in a different way.

Certainly if the opportunity for change were undesirably easy, we should see instances of the backward swing of the pendulum. What we do see is either, as in the case of home relief, a practically static condition, or as in the case of institutional relief, a very slowly developing series of partial changes affecting this, that, or the other fraction of the problem. But at no time in all of the two hundred years do we see any thoroughgoing consideration

and study of the problem as a whole, of its underlying principles, and of the distribution of its functions as between various governmental units. Wholly apart from any opinions or inclinations in regard to the general matter of change, these particular aspects of society must impress any student, I think, as presenting an almost impregnable position against anyone proposing any kind of change for any reason whatever; that is, of weighing the thing that is, so heavily against the thing that might be, as to make change in this field much less rapid than changes occurring in the conditions under which we live,—changes in governmental methods, in economic conditions, in communication, in transportation and, perhaps above all, changes in social ideals.

In closing, however, it perhaps should be pointed out that these particular things which we have been considering are not typical of the whole range of activity of organized society. Each of them relates to only a small fraction of the community,—the dependent or the delinquent. Each of them is operated largely away from public view and commands only a very minor fraction of public interest. Possibly if we were dealing with those administrative agencies and with those laws and policies which affect all classes of people, say education or taxation, or, recently, health, we might find (or perhaps we might not find), a different story.

HOMER FOLKS.

## REVIEWS OF BOOKS

*Greenwich Village.* By ANNA ALICE CHAPIN. (New York: Dodd, Mead and Company. 1917. Pp. 301. With illustrations by Allan Gilbert Cram.)

The contents of this book consist of two distinct parts, one dealing with the historical associations of Greenwich Village, and the other giving an account of the places of interest and habit of life of what has been aptly termed the Latin quarter of New York City. Beginning with its origin as the site of an Indian village by the name of Sapokanikan, the author draws an interesting picture of the development of the place, first as a Dutch farming community, and then, in the eighteenth century, as a fashionable suburb which was the abode of such men as Sir Peter Warren, Oliver de Lancey, William Bayard and Abraham Mortier, until, after having been, early in the nineteenth century, a refuge from the plagues of yellow fever and cholera, it became the Bohemian quarter of the city. Separate chapters are devoted to the history of Washington Square, "The Gallant Career of Sir Peter Warren," "The Story of Richmond Hill," with its romantic associations of John Adams and Aaron Burr, and to a sympathetic account of "Tom Paine, Infidel." At various points the author calls attention to the resolute spirit of independence of the village and its obstinate refusal to be merged into the surrounding city, a spirit which forms a connecting link between the old village and the new and may well account in part for that quality of "a haven, a refuge, a place of protected freedom" for all that is advanced in thought, or daring and unconventional in the social and artistic life of the city, which is so characteristic of the Greenwich Village of today.

In the second part of the book, which contains interesting descriptions of the noted restaurants and tea shops, the clubs and balls, the theaters and places of entertainment of the village, the author has further occasion to refer to this rebellious opposition to conform to any rule of thumb, to this quality, as one writer expressed it, of "a place where you can be yourself, live as you will and work out your scheme of life without a lot of criticism

and convention to keep tripping you up." The entire volume is written with keen insight and appreciative understanding, in an engaging style, abounding in felicitous expressions, befitting the nature of the subject. Attractive illustrations by Allan Gilbert Cram add to the value of the book.

v. L.

*Nylic War Stories.* (New York: New York Life Insurance Company. 1920. Pp. xiv, 208.)

This is a compilation of the records of the service in the World War of the soldiers, sailors and marines who went from the home office of the New York Life Insurance Company in New York City. As such it may well be imitated not only by other companies in the same line of business but by other great commercial and industrial corporations. Mr. Kingsley, the President of the New York Life Insurance Company, is to be commended for having encouraged the publication of such a book.

The body of the work is taken up with the photographs and interesting personal histories of 169 men who entered the service. It is to be regretted that about 23 other narratives could not be obtained. Reticence, neglect and a mistaken sense of modesty may be ascribed as reasons for the failure of these men to hand down to posterity records for which their future descendants or collateral relatives will search in vain. It is to be hoped that the Company publishing this work will eventually decide to issue a volume covering in a similar fashion those who entered the service from its employ in other than the home office.

J. S.

## NOTES AND QUERIES

### PERSONAL

By the provisions of the will of Frances E. DeLong of Utica, the DeLong Historical Prize for Utica Free Academy students is established. The will provides that \$500 be given to the Board of School Commissioners, the income from which will be for prizes to students of the academy who shall excel in their study of history, especially United States History.

During October Mr. and Mrs. A. B. Morris, Miss Meda Cox and Mrs. E. B. Fancher of Wyoming, motored to Wright's Corners and went through the old pioneer cemetery. They found much of interest in the sightly plot. Many of the stones are in a good degree of preservation, others were crumbling, and still more fallen over but can be restored.

At the Pilgrim Tercentenary observances held August 28, 29 and 30 at Provincetown, Mass., New York State was represented by Mr. John A. Stewart, chairman of the Sulgrave Institute, Dr. John H. Finley, Commissioner of Education<sup>1</sup> and Dr. James Sullivan, State Historian. Dr. Finley delivered an address; and Dr. Sullivan spoke on "The immigrant."

### HISTORICAL SOCIETIES AND CLUBS

On December 20, 1920, at a meeting of the Huntington Historical Society, a paper on "The Home Defense Reserve, Cold Spring Harbor—and A History of Troop K, First Cavalry, New York State Guard—Huntington," by Lieutenant Robert L. Simpson and First Sergeant Henry H. Saylor, both of Troop K, was presented. On January 17, 1921, a paper on the "Work of the American Red Cross and Needlework Guild of America. Support of the Several National Loans" was presented by Mrs. Henry S. Saylor.

The Mohawk Valley Historical Association met September 20, 1920, at the home of W. Pierrepont White, President of the association. A Publication Committee was appointed to prepare and publish a pamphlet setting forth the objects of the association,

and it was resolved that this committee be authorized to publish 2000 copies of the booklet. It was decided to incorporate the association and Louis M. King was appointed a committee to prepare the articles of incorporation. Col. John W. Vrooman was elected an Honorary Life President of the association and a vote of thanks was extended to him for his efforts in behalf of the association.

A meeting of the trustees of the Montgomery County Historical Society was held September 27th. It was reported that Fort Johnson had been visited this summer by an exceptionally large number of people. Among the guests at the old house was Albert James McDonald, Editor of the *Architectural Forum*, who has asked permission to publish photographs of Fort Johnson in his magazine and to have details drawn to scale.

After a period of two years' inactivity, the Livingston County Historical Society was rejuvenated September 25, 1920, when members of the society gathered at Ashantee as the guests of the president, Mrs. Herbert Wadsworth, for the summer meeting. At a meeting of the Board of Councilmen, which was held immediately following the meeting, County Judge Lockwood R. Doty, of Geneseo, was elected a member of that body to succeed the late George B. Adams, of Geneseo. Florence Van Allen, secretary and treasurer of the association, reported ten new members enrolled.

The Monday Historical Club of Pulaski held its open meeting September 27, 1920, at the residence of Mrs. George W. Betts. The officers for the coming year are as follows: President, Miss Emily L. Clark; honorary president, Mrs. Nathan B. Smith; vice-president, Miss Olive C. Richards; recording and corresponding secretary, Miss Anna G. More; treasurer, Mrs. Grant G. Edick; historian, Mrs. Herbert W. Amon; librarian, Mrs. Frederick W. Crocker; press correspondent, Mrs. Byron G. Seamans.

The first meeting of the season of the Kings County Historical Society was held September 28, 1920, at the society headquarters. Charles A. Ditmas presided. It was announced that the society would conduct a celebration from December 19th to 22d to commemorate the landing of the Pilgrims, the celebration to start with a religious service on December 19th, followed by nightly meetings and an exhibit in the society rooms.

A large delegation of members of the Dutchess County Historical Society left Poughkeepsie on the morning of September 29, 1920, to take part in the third annual historical pilgrimage of the society. A full outline of the plan for this pilgrimage was given in the October issue of this *QUARTERLY*.

The keynote sounded at the meeting of the Staten Island Historical Society, held October 2, 1920, on the historic site of Staten Island's first court house and church, in the picturesque grove in the bend of the Amboy road between New Dorp and Oakwood, was the speech of Borough President Calvin D. Van Name, who officially informed the members that after years of vain struggles in the legislature during his terms as assemblyman, he had now solved the question of protecting the place where Staten Island's first court house and first church stood, by including the site in the lines of the great South Side boulevard, which will be extended to the southern end of Staten Island at Tottenville. Likewise the site of Stony Brook will be preserved by including it in a local widening of the Amboy road. Other addresses were delivered by Ira K. Morris, who gave a short historic review of Stony Brook; Major Applegate of Freehold, N. J., who brought greetings from the New Jersey Historical Society at Trenton, and the Monmouth County Historical Society at Freehold; A. W. Callison, who read a paper on the history of the old schools on Staten Island; Cornelius G. Kolff who read a chapter out of his *Staten Island Stories* entitled "The Christening of Green Ridge"; and the Rev. Ettore Balletta, an Italian clergyman connected with the Moravian Church, who explained that some of the Italians belonging to his parish were descendants of the same stock of Waldensians who, coming from Italy with their coreligionists, the Huguenots, had settled at Stony Brook.

At a meeting of the Herkimer County Historical Society, held October 2, 1920, at Herkimer, Col. J. W. Vrooman, President of the society, gave a report of an important meeting held at the Herkimer Home in August last. This report was followed by a talk by Prof. Fisher, superintendent of schools, on the importance of teaching history in the public schools, and a paper entitled "Brief thoughts relative to the source and value of our citizenship" by Frank B. Parkhurst of Frankfort, who has for 27 years been vice-president of the society.

The first winter meeting of the Daughters of Columbia County Historical Society, Inc., was held at the Hotel McAlpin October 5, 1920. It consisted of a resume of the summer meetings. Twenty-one members were elected.

The articles of incorporation of the Mohawk Valley Historic Association were filed in the office of the County Clerk, October 5, 1920. The principal office of the corporation is to be Utica and the following directors are named in the document for the first year: John W. Vrooman, Herkimer; William Pierrepont White, Frederick T. Proctor, Utica; Loomis Burrell, Little Falls; Jeremiah Keck, Johnstown; Charles F. McClumpha, Estelle D. Greene, Amsterdam; and Louis M. King, Hanford Robison, Schenectady. The object is to provide accurate and historic information for map makers, road users and all visitors to the historic Mohawk Valley region. The operations of the corporation will be principally conducted in the counties of Oneida, Herkimer, Fulton, Montgomery and Schenectady. The Association is composed of a membership representative of historical and patriotic associations in the Mohawk Valley. It welcomes everyone to join its membership. It has no dues but each one desiring membership should send a dollar in order to aid in paying the expenses of two publications, one of which is now ready for distribution, containing much valuable information about the valley, and the other, a more elaborate publication which is to contain some fifty illustrations, which should be ready for delivery in March, 1921.

A committee was appointed at the semi-annual meeting of the Dutchess County Historical Society, held at Vassar Institute on October 7, 1920, which will approach the supervisors with the request that valuable historical documents which are now in the basement of the court house may have care in order that they may be preserved. Some of the documents are very old, among them being records filed by Henry Livingston when he was county clerk. Several short talks suggesting work to be undertaken by the society were given.

At the 24th annual state conference of the Daughters of the American Revolution, held at Saratoga Springs, October 7-8, 1920, Mrs. Charles White Nash of Albany was re-elected regent. The principal addresses were made by Dr. James Sullivan, the State



Historian, of Albany, who spoke on the coming of the Pilgrims, and by William C. Smith, State Superintendent of Immigrant Education, of Albany.

The following directors were elected at a meeting of the Holland Purchase Historical Society, held at Batavia October 22, 1920: John Kennedy, W. B. Whitcombe, K. B. Mathes, John Gillard, Carrie E. Dewey, Mrs. John G. Torrance, A. H. Call, S. W. Elliott and William H. McBride. Miss Dewey will continue as the caretaker for the Land Office Museum. The directors then elected the following officers: Mrs. Francis Thomas, president; William H. Coon, vice-president; L. W. Griswold, recording secretary; John P. Casey, treasurer.

The Historical Society of Warwick cooperated with a committee of gentlemen from that village in planning for a celebration given on Forester Day, October 23, 1920. A pageant, depicting the arrival of Frank Forester on his first visit to Warwick, was given. Forester and his friend arrived at the old Wawayanda House at 12:30 in an old carriage, coming up the road now named Forester Avenue, the same route by which they arrived on their first shooting expedition in the Warwick valley. At the front of the old hotel building, where an old trough of wood and an old pump had been replaced for the occasion, they were met by Tom Draw and his servants and hangers-on of the old tavern. There they were welcomed in the playlet which was enacted on the little knoll just west of the tavern, and regaled with pseudo-applejack and other refreshments while listening to tales of the wonderful stock of game birds, foxes and fish that were to be found in the vales, the mountains and the fine streams and lakes hereabouts by Jem Lynn, 'Squire Conklin, Elder Ketchum and Daniel Seers, with other characters of that day. After the pageant a parade was formed of those in costume, which turned in to the Old School Baptist Church, now over 100 years old. While the guests of the day and their hosts were at dinner at the Old Shingle House, a relic of pre-Revolutionary days and now the home of the Warwick Historical Society, others secured box lunches at the old stone home of W. B. Sayre, the old Baird's Tavern of Revolutionary days. The old house, which was built in 1766, bore a sign: "Baird's Tavern. Gen. Washington entertained here on July 27, 1782." At 2:30 the unveiling exercises were held around the memorial stone and

tablet erected in the little triangle at the fountain. Mr. G. F. Ketchum, vice-president of the Historical Society, acted as master of ceremonies and introduced the speakers. The Hon. F. V. Sanford, president of the Historical Society, and Mr. Harry Forester Smith, president of the Sportsmen of America, which organizations had together given the memorial, presented it to the village and Village Trustee H. G. Pierson accepted the memorial for the village. An address of Mr. Fred E. Pond, former editor of the *Sportsmen's Review*, and now with the *American Angler*, was read. After a few songs the audience moved to the Memorial Park site where a fox chase was staged, and in the evening a costume ball was held in the Village Hall.

The 37th annual meeting of the Historical Society of Newburgh Bay and the Highlands was held in its room in the City Library building October 24, 1920. President Anthony reported the awarding of gold pieces to students of the Newburgh Academy for essays on the topic "Historical Fortifications on the west bank of the Hudson River," the first prize being won by Marjorie Cuttle and the second prize divided between Florence E. Newsome and Margareta McGeeney. The president was authorized to provide similar prizes for the coming year, the topic to be announced later. The Hon. Walter C. Anthony was re-elected president, and the other officers chosen were: Vice-presidents, Frederick W. Senff, Rev. J. W. F. Carlisle, David Barclay; recording secretary and librarian, Miss Lillie O. Estabrook; corresponding secretary, William Cook Belknap; treasurer, J. Renwick Thompson.

The Broome County Historical Society was formed October 26, 1920. Robert E. Gardinor, who was elected president, declared that the organization should be instrumental in preserving historical relics and arousing a keener interest among the citizens in the early history of their county. The aims of the society will be to supply and maintain reading rooms with books, papers and magazines, to conduct debates, as entertainment and not as a necessity, to hold mock trials and to have lectures of a historical nature. He announced also that anyone having relics which he desires to donate to the society may communicate with him.

October 28th, the anniversary of the Battle of White Plains, was observed by the White Plains Chapter of the D. A. R., with a social meeting at Washington's Headquarters.

At a meeting of the Wyoming Historical Society October 29, 1920, ways and means for the "Old Wrights Corners Cemetery" were discussed.

At the fall business meeting of the Albion Historical Club the topic committee in its report assigned subjects for the weekly meetings to and including January 31, 1921, and seventeen new members were elected.

At a meeting of the Fort Stanwix Chapter of the D. A. R., W. Pierrepont White of Utica, president of the newly organized Mohawk Valley Historical Association, gave an interesting address on the Old Mohawk Turnpike.

A historical pageant, "The Pilgrim," was presented in the Historical Hall, Mt. Kisco, November 4 and 5, 1920.

The Albion Historical Club met November 8, 1920. Rev. E. P. Wood, the new president, presided, Mr. Sanford T. Church spoke on "The Land of the Rising Sun," and Miss Annette L. Noble read a paper upon Mythology and Legend of the same country.

The meeting of the Syracuse Ladies' Historical Club, held November 8, 1920, was devoted to the Pilgrims. Mrs. C. Davy read a poem "The Landing of the Pilgrims," Mrs. Arthur Witham read a paper on "The Pilgrim Fathers and Their Influence on American Life," and Mrs. D. D. Warne read extracts from the "Courtship of Miles Standish."

A the monthly meeting of the Oneida County Historical Society, held November 8, 1920, at Utica, a plan was presented of having historical reports from the various townships of the county and from the local historians read at a series of public meetings instead of the usual historical addresses. This proposition was favored by W. Pierrepont White, who suggested that the reports, which the local historians are to send to Albany, be read at the meetings, as they would be of interest to the people of Utica and Oneida County who are interested in historical affairs. The report of the librarian showed that many volumes and valuable pamphlets had been presented to the society for exhibition in the historical museum.

A meeting of the Mohawk Valley Historical Association was held at the Fort Rensselaer club house, at Canajoharie, November 9, 1920, Mr. W. Pierrepont White of Utica presiding. Mr. White

explained the purpose of the association; Colonel John W. Vrooman, of Herkimer, honorary life president, presented the resolutions which were passed by the society; and plans were made to issue a guide book of the Mohawk valley, to be distributed among the various civic and automobile associations of the state. After the business session, Harry V. Bush of Canajoharie gave an illustrated talk on Mohawk valley scenes beginning at Schenectady and showing historic spots between that city and Utica. Following the meeting Walter H. Lipe, who was the general host of the occasion, conducted the visitors through the Beech Nut plant.

Professor Rilla E. Jackman of Syracuse University gave a lecture, illustrated by stereopticon, on the making of coins before the Onondaga Historical Society November 12, 1920.

At a meeting of the Oneonta Chapter of the D. A. R., Judge Dow Beekman of Schoharie County gave an address entitled "The Intertwining of Otsego and Schoharie in the Revolution," and after the meeting gave the members an opportunity to inspect many interesting historic souvenirs brought with him to Oneonta.

The annual meeting of the Arcadia Historical Society was held November 13, 1920. The following officers were re-elected: President, E. H. Clark; vice-presidents, Miss C. A. Prescott, Mrs. A. E. Williams, and W. H. Kelley; secretaries, Miss Mae A. Peirson, Mrs. P. R. Sleight; financial secretary, Mrs. M. F. Snyder; treasurer, Miss Anna Miller. The chief feature of the evening was a report of the State Historical meeting, read by Mrs. Minnie F. Snyder.

A Pilgrim Anniversary celebration was held November 15, 1920, at Chancellor's Hall, Albany. The speaker of the evening was the Rev. Alexander Ramsey of London, England, who spoke on those sterling citizens, the Mayflower Pilgrims, and of the admirable qualities of their descendants. According to Dr. Ramsey the Mayflower Compact is to-day one of the world's greatest historic documents. Dr. Charles E. Jefferson of Brooklyn, one of the representatives of this country who attended the Mayflower celebration in England last July, also delivered an address. Dr. John H. Finley presided at the meeting.

The annual meeting of the Ontario County Historical Society was held in the Historical Museum, Canandaigua, November 16, 1920. Following the reading of reports and the election of officers

for the coming year, Mrs. Harry C. Buell read a paper on "Historic Homes of the Hudson." The following officers were re-elected: President, Charles F. Milliken; vice-president, Miss Antoinette P. Granger; recording secretary, Mrs. John H. Jewett; corresponding secretary, Mrs. George W. Hamlin; treasurer, Frank W. Chesebro. During the year the society has received several valuable gifts.

The monthly meeting of the Huntington Historical Society was held Monday afternoon, November 22, 1920.

At the meeting of the directors of the Dutchess County Historical Society held November 26, 1920, at Poughkeepsie, action was taken on the greatly regretted death of their secretary, John C. Sickley. A tender of the position of secretary was made to Miss Helen Reynolds, and a discussion was had over the need of a club house.

The Flushing Historical Society held a meeting in St. George's Parish House November 29, 1920, at which time Mr. George W. Pople, president of the society, reported that the efforts to secure the use of two rooms in the Flushing Town Hall in which to keep the records of the society had been unsuccessful. A committee was appointed to continue the movement. Governor Prince gave a talk on the celebration of the 300th anniversary of the Landing of the Pilgrims held in Plymouth.

At the monthly meeting of the Society of old Brooklynites, held December 2, 1920, at the Hall of Records, Charles A. Ditmas president of the Long Island Historical Society, was the principal speaker. His subject was "The Use of History in Americanization Work."

The 10th anniversary of the founding of the Albany Colony of New England Women was celebrated December 2, 1920. The speaker of the afternoon was Dr. James Sullivan, State Historian, who had for his subject, "Immigration." The history of the colony was read by Mrs. Mary Hubbard and Dr. Julia G. McNutt, honorary president, gave reminiscences of the early days.

At the meeting of the Belmont Literary and Historical Society, held December 3, 1920, a "Once Upon a Time" program was carried out. Mrs. M. W. Sortore gave an interesting talk on the early days of Amity township, dwelling on reminiscences of names and places familiar in Belmont and vicinity. At roll call each

member told the story connected with the family heirloom or relic, which they had brought to the meeting. Many interesting articles were on display.

At the meeting of the Arcadia Historical Society, held December 4, 1920, the main topic of the hour was: A few side lights on our National history. One member read a tribute to Hon. S. S. Peirson, the founder of the society; Mr. W. H. Sherman read a paper in answer to the question: "Why are not our most notable men elected President?"; Miss Ethel Williams read an answer to the question "With what religious denominations were our Presidents affiliated?"; an interesting sketch of Robert Morris was read by Miss Mae Peirson; and Mr. E. H. Clark read a paper on "New York and the Vice-Presidents."

E. Harold Spender of London, England was the speaker at the meeting of the Daughters of Columbia County Historical Society at the Hotel McAlpin, New York, on December 7, 1920. Mr. Spender was the only lay member in the British Delegation sent to this country in honor of the Mayflower Tercentenary. Several new members were elected.

At the monthly meeting of the Oneida Historical Society, which was held December 13, 1920 in the Munson-Williams Memorial, Utica, the librarian reported donations of newspapers, periodicals, etc., and several relics.

The Kings County Historical Society held a celebration December 21, 1920, marking the tercentenary anniversary of the landing of the Pilgrim Fathers, at their rooms, Flatbush. The speakers of the evening were: John A. Stewart, chairman of the Board of Governors of Sulgrave Institution; Mrs. Charles D. Sperry, president of Brooklyn Colony, New England Women; Mrs. Robert Franklin Ives, president of the Colonial Daughters of the 17th Century; the Rev. Charles William Roeder, chaplain, Long Island State Society, Daughters of the Revolution, and George Tiffany.

The preliminary announcement of the lecture and entertainment course at the Albany Institute and Historical and Art Society for the coming season is of extraordinary interest. December 2, 1920 William Webster Ellsworth, former president of the Century Club, spoke on "The Pilgrim Fathers." Later James H. Manning will have for his subject "Manuscripts of Old Albany."

At a meeting of the Olean Old Timers Association, held October 25th, a resolution was adopted expressing the interest of the association in the formation of a historical association in Olean.

A proposition to revive the Jefferson County Historical Society, elect Stuart D. Lansing, president, and purchase the Hungerford house at the corner of Washington and Mullin streets, Watertown, is being considered. The society was organized in 1886 but has been in a more or less dormant state for several years. The Hungerford house was built in 1825 and is of a striking type of architecture. It was erected by Orville Hungerford. The first owner of the house was a member of congress in the '40's. It is proposed that the historical society buy this house and use it as a repository for historical relics of Jefferson county. There are a number of valuable historical relics which have been given to the society and they are at present stored in the Flower Memorial Library basement at Watertown.

In an editorial of the *Poughkeepsie Star*, dated December 3, 1920, a plan is suggested to consolidate the Dutchess County Society and the Dutchess County Historical Society, the combined membership of which might reasonably be expected to reach 1,000. With such a membership the society would have little difficulty in raising funds for the home which is advocated.

The Rochester Historical Society will have a series of lectures during the season. Mr. William W. Ellsworth, historian and author, gave the first of the series December 3, 1920, in the Historical and Art Society building, his title being "The Pilgrim Fathers."

At "Valley Night" at the Men's Club December 13th, at the First Methodist Episcopal Church, Mohawk, brief papers by Rev. W. N. P. Dailey and W. Pierrepont White, described the thrilling adventures of Seymour Schermerhorn and Adam Helmer, and Mr. Harry V. Bush of Canajoharie gave the result of his extensive study and use of his camera in a most interesting lecture on the points of historical interest in the Mohawk valley.

One of the innovations of the annual meeting of Plymouth Congregational Church, Utica, was the election of Warren C. Rowley of New York as church historian. Mr. Rowley has kept the records of the church from the beginning and to him is Plymouth Church indebted for the fact that the data of the organization has been so well preserved. At his suggestion the new South Congregational Church elected a historian.

A committee from the Albany Institute and Historical and Art Society is assisting City Engineer Frank R. Lanagan in the selection of new names for the streets of Albany. Names taken from Albany or National history have been approved. Part of these names will be applied to the streets that are now named in duplicate and the remainder will be kept in reserve for new streets.

PUBLICATIONS, BOOKS, ARTICLES, MANUSCRIPTS

In the *Proceedings of the American Antiquarian Society* at the annual meeting held in Worcester, Mass., on October 15, 1919, (lately issued) is an interesting study by Frederick J. Turner, of *Greater New England in the Middle of the Nineteenth Century*, dealing with the effects on population and economic life of emigration to New York and the North Central States.

The *Wisconsin Magazine of History* for December, 1920, contains a notice of the letters and documents of the Wood family of Vermont, a recent accession to the collections of the State Historical Society of Wisconsin. The best known member of the family was Colonel Eleazer Derby Wood, a native of New York and graduate of West Point. In the War of 1812 he distinguished himself on the Niagara frontier. He was killed in the sortie from Fort Erie on September 17, 1814.

In the November (1920) issue of the *Bulletin of the New York Public Library* is an article by Harry Miller Lydenberg, *A History of the New York Public Library. Chapter V—The Harlem Library*. In the same number of the *Bulletin* is the conclusion from earlier numbers of A. J. Wall's bibliography, *A List of New York Almanacs 1694-1850*. The department, *The War and After*, is continued through fifteen pages.

A Theodore Roosevelt Memorial is the leading feature of the *Journal of American History* for July-December, 1919, nos. 3 and 4 being combined in a single number. This tribute consists of addresses delivered by Elihu Root, William Boyce Thompson, Herbert Hoover, John Hays Hammond, Alton B. Parker, Colonel Henry D. Lindsley, commander of the American Legion, Jean J. Jusserand, French ambassador to the United States, General Daniel G. Shanks, Dr. William T. Manning and Job E. Hedges at the Waldorf-Astoria, New York, on October 27, 1919, the first anniversary of Roosevelt's birth which occurred after his death.



*Americana*, in the last quarterly issued for 1920, has an article on *Personal Characteristics of Washington Irving*, by Charles A. Ingraham, and a kindred article on *Sleepy Hollow Cemetery* by Caroline Williams Berry. In the issue for January, 1921, is an article on *White Servitude in New York and New Jersey* by William Stuart.

The Lewis H. Morgan Chapter of the New York State Archeological Association has published the address, *Western New York under the French*, delivered by Dr. Frank H. Severance before the chapter, in the Memorial Art Gallery, Rochester, N. Y., December 19, 1919.

*The Annals of Iowa*, in the July issue, records the death of six prominent citizens of Iowa who were born in New York State. They are John R. Sage, born at Blenheim, December 29, 1832, died in Des Moines, Iowa, May 28, 1919, who, after considerable service in the ministry and newspaper editorship, filled for twenty years the post of Director of the Iowa Weather and Crop Service; Eugene Secor, born at Peekskill Hollow, May 13, 1841, died at Forest City, Iowa, May 14, 1919, who held many places of trust, political and educational, and was distinguished for his practical knowledge of agriculture, horticulture and apiculture; James Albert Smith, born at Castile, Wyoming County, February 4, 1851, died at Pasadena, California, January 12, 1918, who accumulated a large fortune in the lumber business, and served four years in the lower house, thirteen in the upper house of the Iowa legislature; L. B. Parshall, born at Interlaken, Seneca County, June 28, 1845, died at Canton, Iowa, May 9, 1913, who served two terms in the Iowa State Senate; Oliver P. Rowles, born at Beth (Bath?) March 25, 1821, died at Albia, Iowa, August 10, 1913, who was a representative in the ninth and ninth extra General Assemblies, being elected in 1861; and Guernsey Smith, born in Ulster County July 15, 1833, died at Hawkeye, Iowa, July 16, 1915, who acted as government surveyor, took part in the Spirit Lake Massacre Relief Expedition in 1857, and shared many of the experiences of frontier life.

*The New York Genealogical and Biographical Record* for October, 1920, contains *Notes on the English Ancestry of George Clinton, First Governor of New York*, contributed by Dr. Joseph M. Beatty, Jr., and *Index of Marriages and Members, Reformed Dutch Church of Wawarsing*, compiled by Royden Woodward Vosburgh.

*The Minnesota History Bulletin*, published quarterly by the Minnesota Historical Society, mentions in the issue of August, 1920, among accessions to the society's collections, an original letter of David Colden, a son of Cadwallader Colden, Colonial lieutenant governor of New York, to his wife, written June 27, 1784 from London, whither he had gone to urge a claim for compensation for losses incurred by his course as a loyalist in the Revolution. The letter was presented by Mrs. Charles Neely, of St. Paul, a descendent of Colden. In a collection of autograph letters received by the society from Mr. Arthur G. Douglas, of Minneapolis, are letters from George William Curtis and Josiah G. Holland.

*The Vineland Historical Magazine*, published by the Vineland Historical and Antiquarian Society, at Vineland, N. J., publishes in the issue for October, 1920, a letter, dated Utica, February 3, 1880, written by Governor Horatio Seymour to Riley M. Adams, of Vineland.

*The Bulletin of Friends' Historical Society of Philadelphia*, in its November number, has an article on *The Nine Partners Boarding School*, in Dutchess County, N. Y., by Esther L. S. McGonegal.

In *The Proceedings of the New Jersey Historical Society*, a quarterly published at Newark, N. J., is a note on "New York's Most Historic Site," that on which stood the first Stadt Huys in New York City.

*The Year Book* of the Dutchess County Historical Society for 1919 contains a report of investigations made by Mr. John Mylod and Mr. George Overocker, regarding the Dutchess County seal and the surrogate's seal; a list of original Dutchess County settlements, some of which have disappeared or exist under new names, prepared by Mr. George H. Sherman and Mr. George S. Van Vliet; and an article by Dr. William S. Thomas on Major Henry Livingston.

In *State Service* for January, 1921, is an article on the *Roosevelt Wild Life State Memorial*, by Dr. Charles C. Adams, director of the Roosevelt Wild Life Forest Experiment Station of the New York State College of Forestry at Syracuse.

Daniel T. Ronk of Brooklyn has compiled and presented the following to the Historical Society of Newburgh Bay and the Highlands: "Inscriptions in the graveyard of the old Shawan-

gunk church," and also "The old Schoonmaker burying ground on the field about one mile east of Tuthilltown, Ulster Co., N. Y. by the Wallkill river."

Miss Helen Wilkinson Reynolds has completed the listing of un-indexed maps found in the archives of the Dutchess County Clerk's office. There were found 69 maps, some of them well executed drawings, and others merely outlines of boundaries.

An article on *The Town of Marlborough in the Revolution* appeared in the *Poughkeepsie Courier* for September 19, 1920.

M. C. Rice, the first editor of the *Westfield Republican*, who is now 94 years of age, in a letter to the present editor of the *Republican* and published in the issue for September 23, 1920, recalls the early history of Westfield.

In the *Hudson Republican* for September 28, 1920, is an article by Frederick J. Collier, entitled, *History of Columbia County Bar*.

A short article on the *History of Ontario County*, written for Hall Grange by R. F. Hall, appeared in the *Penn Yan Chronicle* for September 29, 1920.

The *Honcoye Falls Times* in recent issues has been publishing a series of articles on *The Pioneers of Mendon* by Mrs. Anah B. Yates.

The *Hudson Republican* in its issue of September 29, 1920, published an article on the *Daughters of Columbia County Historical Society, Inc.*, by its President, Mrs. Charles J. Come.

In the *Albany Argus* for October 10, 1920, there appeared an article on the *Natural Beauty of Thacher Park in the Helderbergs*.

S. J. Turtlelot of Syracuse has prepared a very complete *History of the Ives Family*. An excerpt, regarding that branch of the family that had homes in Herkimer County appears in the *Herkimer Citizen* under date of October 12, 1920.

An interesting account of *Historical spots at Middle Grove*, Saratoga County, has been written by Miss Nellie M. Smith of that place. In her article, which appears in the *Saratoga Saratogian* for October 19, 1920, she takes up many points of value to her community and to the county.

A remarkable collection of autographs relating to the period of 1865, just at the close of the Civil War, is contained in a little album that belonged to Col. D. E. Welch, who died at Baraboo recently. It is now in the possession of his widow who will pass

the winter with a sister at Medina, Ohio. *Short Sketches* are given of the various men, whose names appear in this book, and among them men famous in those times from New York State, in the *Madison Democrat* for Sunday, October 31, 1920.

An interesting paper on the *Historical Spots in Yates County*, read by Charles Andrews at the Chamber of Commerce dinner in Penn Yan, appeared in the *Penn Yan Chronicle* for November 5, 1920.

*Yates County in Ye Olden Daye* is the title of an article by Walter Wolcott published in the *Penn Yan Express* November 10, 1920.

*A History of Cattaraugus County in the World War* is being compiled by the Cattaraugus County Branch of the American Legion under the direction of the County Secretary, John S. Leonard of Gowanda, Stanley Eberlee of Cattaraugus, and Cecil J. Horning of Little Valley.

An article on the *History of the Village of Caughnawaga*, one of the principal villages of the Mohawks, especially in the time of Sir William Johnson, appears in the November 12th, 1920 issue of the *Amsterdam Recorder*.

Under the title *Mohawk Valley Historic Association*, compiled by Col. John W. Vrooman, there has appeared the first of an intended series of three pamphlets dealing with the inception and workings of the organization named, and with the historic facts that are its concern.

In the *St. Johnsville Enterprise* for November 17, 1920, is an article on *Jacob Zimmerman*, a prominent character as a revolutionary hero and strong church man.

*The General Nicholas Herkimer Home* is the title of an article which appears in the *Amsterdam Evening Recorder* of November 20, 1920.

A list of *Historic Places in the Mohawk Valley* and contiguous country, alphabetically arranged with dates and brief comments by the Rev. W. N. P. Dailey, was published in the *Ilion Citizen* for November 18, 1920. A corrective note appears in the issue for November 23, 1920 of the *Herkimer Citizen*.

Col. J. L. Cuninghame of Glen Falls has written an interesting book entitled *Three Years with the Adirondack Regiment*.

The Mohawk Valley Historic Association has printed the minutes of its meeting in a folder convenient for distribution. The work

was done by the secretary, Hanford Robinson, and in addition to the minutes gives the names of those who were present and also the names of the officers of the association.

The Yearbook of the Huntington Historical Society was issued during the month of December, 1920.

A letter has been given to the Wyoming Historical Society bearing the inscription, Peter Jenison, Gainesville, Genesee Co. It was written in 1835, has no envelop, merely folded to simulate one. There is much of interest in it and it will be published shortly.

#### MUSEUMS, HISTORIC MONUMENTS AND REMAINS

One of the most complete collections of historic relics in the Capitol District is owned by Alton J. Webb of Glens Falls, who has been several years in gathering curios from every part of the United States. The majority of the relics were unearthed from battlefields in this vicinity and the collection occupies an entire room in the Webb home. A writing desk, used by General Webb, commander of the Colonial troops at Fort Edward in 1757, a wooden canteen used at the battle of Lexington, cannon balls from the Lake George and Saratoga battlefields, relics from Ticonderoga, Crown Point, Fort William Henry, Fort Ann and Fort Edward, a piece of wood from the flagship of Admiral Peary's fleet at the battle of Lake Erie and another from the coffin of Lord Howe who was killed at Ticonderoga in 1758, several axes and a shovel used in building Fort William Henry and an axe used in building the fleet which carried Abercrombie's army to Ticonderoga in 1758, tomahawks and a skull dug up on the Lake George battlefield, a copy of the *Daily Citizen* printed on wall paper during the siege of Vicksburg by the Union army in 1863, giving an account of the capture of the city, a piece of wood from the deck of the first steamboat to ply the waters of Lake George, a bootjack used by Horace Greeley, when he lived at East Poultney, Vt., a copy of Jeff Davis' bail bond, and a foot tub used by Gen. Grant while at Mount McGregor are included in this collection.

An exhibit of articles of historic value in the possession of various residents of the village and town of Hoosick was held under the auspices of the Hoosick Falls Women's Club December 15, 1920. Included in the displays were firearms, legal documents, commissions, bedspreads, candle molds, tallow dips, drapery, currency,

bonds, an original seal of the State of New York, old time dresses, silver candlesticks, wooden shoes, a wooden dipper, a horn spoon, knapsacks, gloves and helmets of Revolutionary times, powder horns and shot pouches, leather buckets, etc.

At the monthly meeting of the Oneida Historical Society December 13, 1920, the librarian reported donations of the following relics: Silhouette of John F. Seymour, 1836, from Mrs. Charles S. Fairchild, Cazenovia; Walton's complete angler in miniature, from William M. Storrs; medal of Paris Exposition, 1867, from Joseph Holland, Brooklyn; two medals given by the Utica Mechanics' Association, and one given by the State Agricultural Society to Philo S. Curtis, by W. G. Stone Whitestown. Many volumes have also been presented to the society for exhibition in the Historical Museum. Some valuable pamphlets were presented by Miss Susan Bagg, one a rare book containing in complete form the long lost speech made by the famous Indian Red Jacket.

In commemoration of its 2,000 students and alumni who participated in every American war since the Revolution, Union College of Schenectady, founded in 1795, plans the erection of a memorial chapel, designed by McKim, Mead & White, which will cost in the neighborhood of a quarter of a million dollars. The memorial chapel will follow the French Monastic style of architecture found in Union's old buildings, designed in 1813 by Jacques Ramee.

According to the appraisal of the estate of the late Dr. John Van Derpoel, the Albany Institute and Historical and Art Society is to receive a collection of oil paintings.

The oldest Presbyterian Church, the First Presbyterian Church of Jamaica, erected in 1813, is to be moved round the corner following a thirty-year lease of part of the site. The congregation was organized in 1662. During the early history of the church many thrilling incidents occurred, and it was seized by Episcopalians in Colonial days and regained only after a long fight.

Herkimer's oldest church, the Reformed Church, has been repaired and the tower straightened. The ground on which it stands is undoubtedly a part of the tract set aside as " God's Acre " by John Jost Petrie, the leader in the early days, and on which the first settlers erected their log church, which was burned by Indians on the night of November 12, 1757.

Mr. Frank L. Steele of Gloversville, has added many articles of historical interest to the collection which he has lent to the Johnstown Historical society, which are on exhibition in Johnson hall in that city.

The 150th anniversary of St. Philip's Church in the Highlands, Garrison, was commemorated from October 13 through October 19th. The church, together with St. Peter's on the Manor of Cortlandt, received a Royal Charter on August 18, 1770. The land on which the church stands was given by Colonel Beverly Robinson, who, at the Revolution, espoused the royal cause and became head of the Intelligence Department of the British Army in New York. The original St. Philip's chapel, a plain wooden structure, was taken down in 1862 to make room for the present Gothic stone church which was consecrated May 1, 1862. Remarkable articles of interest and value were gathered by the committee in charge of the Historical Exhibit under the direction of Stuyvesant Fish, chairman of the committee.

Exhibited on a shelf in the Albany Institute and Historical and Art Society building are some old watch relics, heirlooms of the Ten Eycks. Many other old watch relics are in the possession of some Albanians.

The Binghamton Public Library had an interesting exhibition of implements of Indian warfare and other Indian relics and also exhibited a butterfly collection.

A musty chart, said to be a copy of the first map of New York and representing the city as it was from 1664 to 1668, was shown October 9, 1920, in a case in New York City. The old map, was certified by Alexander J. Wall, curator of the New York Historical Society, to be a replica of the original now in the British Museum.

Walton Van Loan of Catskill, has in his possession an interesting deed or grant by King George III, of lands in Greene County made on November 11th, 1768. The grant conveys 6,000 acres of land in the East Kill valley and is at present owned by Gilbert Colgate of the firm of Colgate & Company.

A collection of 101 documents and pictures of Old Albany was exhibited at the Albany Institute and Historical and Art Society, October 18th to 31st, 1920. The collection is owned by F. L. Reuss.

Tahtoodahoo, head of the remnants of the ancient Iroquois confederacy, in one of the few official communications written in recent years, greeted the Finger Lakes Association. Couched in the picturesque language of the red man, the letter of Tahtoodahoo, written at the council fire on the Onondaga reservation, expresses gratitude from the Indians for the efforts of the inter city chamber of commerce to bring to the attention of the public throughout the country the historic land of the "Romans of the West." He urges that some of the ancient long houses be restored and that his white brother advance the study of the birds, flowers and animals that were the play fellows of his ancestors. A plan has been proposed, under the leadership of the Finger Lakes Association and other organizations, to plant roses along the Finger Lakes Trail and extend the flower lined highways outside the region.

The First National Bank of Utica, had an interesting exhibit at the Moose harvest carnival, held in the State Armory of that city during the month of October, consisting of a collection of rare articles gathered from many sources. Starting with the first printed biography of Christopher Columbus, which appeared in 1540, the exhibit carried the visitor up through the pioneer days of Utica to the present.

It is the desire of the State Museum at Albany to bring together for preservation and eventual exhibition the implements used in the early days of this state in farming operations. For this purpose an appeal has been sent out among the farming communities that any such implements used prior to 1850 be turned over to the museum.

Many gifts have been received by the Huntington Historical Society. They are as follows: manuscripts which include a deed signed by the Rev. Eliphalet Jones (pastor of the First Church of Huntington from 1676 to 1723) in 1729; two hatchets; a pair of hand knit linen stockings; a section of the trunk of the famous old oak that stood near the Whitman ancestral home at West Hills; an artillery-man's outfit (3 pieces); a one-pound shell from Manila Bay, a Spanish-American War relic; and a valuable collection of European war relics.

If suitable quarters can be provided for preserving them two valuable collections of historical papers, maps, pictures, and other articles will be given to the Seneca Falls Historical Society. The society has this matter under consideration.



The Wyoming Historical Society has been presented a letter by Mrs. Andrew Morris which was written March 8, 1832, by Mehetable Chase and addressed to Peter Jenison, Gainesville, N. Y., Warsaw post office, Genesee county, N. Y.

An interesting discovery was made near Cherry Valley by Peter Flint, a Schenectady attorney and his cousin Gillette C. Flint. They found in a neglected burying ground, on the old Flint farm, the graves of their great grandfather and their great great grandfather Robert Flint of Albany, as he was called, their great great grandfather, was second lieutenant of the Schoharie militia who commanded 75 armed men at the great review before Sir William Johnson at Rensselaer about 1750. He died in 1758, and his youngest son, Cornelius, whose grave is in the same plot, died in 1820.

The Rochester Historical Society has received a quantity of historical material from the estate of the late Mrs. Gilman Perkins, founder of the society. This material includes a large number of autograph letters of well known Americans, a quantity of period costumes and hats dating from 1840 to more recent years and many curios collected by Mrs. Perkins during her travels. One of the most notable items in the collection is an engraved silver tray, which was presented to the Hon. Levi S. Chatfield, by the New York State Assembly in 1842. In the center of the tray is a scene of the signing of the Declaration of Independence and about the picture is engraved the text of the document. Three medallion portraits of George Washington, Daniel Webster and Henry Clay and elaborate scroll work, which entirely covers the surface of the tray complete the design.

Two old weather beaten buildings in the town of Sparta, purchased by Frank A. Vanderlip, a banker, are to be preserved because of their historical interest. The late Rear Admiral John Worden, commander of the famous Monitor in its battle with the Merrimac, was born and lived for many years in one of the houses. Continental Inn, a noted hostelry of revolutionary days, will be retained and converted into a museum. Through the generations the story has been handed down that General Washington, in his trips to and from the garrison at West Point, frequented the inn.

An interesting old contract between the patrons of a public school in the town of Clinton and a teacher employed there, dated

Clinton, August the 17th, 1913, was found by Benjamin Traver in the building in which the Patterson Auto Sales Co., Inc., recently moved in from Rhinebeck. The building is being remodeled. The contract was printed in the issue of the *Rhinebeck Gazette* under date of November 13, 1920.

The Field Exploration Committee of the New York Historical Society, which has been exploring lost camp sites of Washington's gallant little army in the Hudson Highlands, is confident that "Connecticut Village," the winter camp of the Connecticut troops of '76, has been discovered. Mr. W. L. Calver, chairman of the committee, in a report states that a pasture lot on the farm of James Smith, about one and one-half miles east of Cold Spring village, and just over the hill east of the old "Plumbush" farm, was found to be favorably situated in every way, and had the large brook necessary to complete the identification. The camp to-day is reached by an abandoned roadway, which until about a generation ago was known as the "Mekell road." This road branches from the Garrison road at De Rhams and skirts the camp on its westerly side at a point on the Smith farm known as "Beverly Warren's."

The Tioga County Historical Society has received many interesting and valuable gifts which include the following: Cannon ball shot from the camp of the Sullivan Expedition, August 26 or 27, 1779, found July 1880 on Park Avenue, Waverly; grapeshot of same date, found in excavating for cellar under the Merriam home at Waverly; Atlas of Tioga County, published in 1869; papers relating to the estate of General Oliver Huntington, 1819-1835; book, dated 1811, containing bookplate of 1812, of "Owego Village Library"; old Greek vase, date 600 B.C., brought from Greece by the late Benjamin Powell; pewter fluid lamp with painted decoration by Bellows; set of tortoise shell snuff boxes; iron poker from hearth of Glen Mary, and an iron plate and screw from the same fireplace; decorated fan showing the "Red Coats" of the Revolutionary Period; bayonet found on battlefield near Salem Church, Fredericksburg, Va., in the year 1869; cannon ball found under foundation platform of the old Dean's tannery, which had been under ground at least three centuries and is a relic of the Revolutionary period; sheet of 18 five and twenty-five cent "shin plasters" issued by the Bank of Tioga, Oswego, N. Y., in 1862 and signed by H. L. Bean, president.

The Daughters of Columbia County Historical Society has been the recipient of some valuable gifts, such as Civil War muskets and accoutrements, scrap books with biographical and other valuable records, articles of clothing and household furnishings of the Revolutionary period, etc., and the members are anxious that these should be stored in some fireproof place until such time as the society is so fortunate as to possess its own house. Request has been made for information regarding such a place with the terms for same by the Historian, Dr. Harriett Van Buren Peckham, 1261 Bergen St., Brooklyn.

The State Architect has completed the model of the new flag room which is to be installed on the second floor of the capitol and artist W. D. Dodge of New York City is now busy on sketches of historical events in New York State, which will be submitted to a committee of prominent citizens including Dr. James Sullivan, the State Historian. The main object of the State Architect in designing the room was to make it as impressive as possible and to drive home the fact to those who visit the room that the American flag is more than just a piece of red, white and blue bunting. Flags of New York State troops of the Revolutionary, Civil, Spanish-American and World wars will be placed in the room when it is completed.

William F. Seward, librarian of the Binghamton Public Library, has requested that residents of that vicinity, who possess relics of Binghamton, such as old handbills issued in canal and stage route days, political posters and advertisements of any kind, donate them to the historical collection in the Library building or lend them.

#### WORLD WAR MEMORIALS AND COLLECTIONS

In a collection of relics which Mr. Frank L. Steele of Gloversville has lent to the Johnstown Historical Society, and exhibited in Johnson Hall of that city, is a gas mask, one that went through the late war with Germany, in a canvas carrying case with straps to carry same on shoulders.

Edward A. Wilkins of Saratoga Avenue, Waterford, has been appointed a deputy state historian to compile a record of the World War veterans of Saratoga County. When completed it will be supplied to public school libraries.

Exercises were held in the Menands School on Sunday, September 19, 1920, in connection with the unveiling and dedication of a bronze tablet containing the names of the men of the district who served during the World War.

It is expected that an effort will be made in the near future to have the school children in Brooklyn, as well as in other parts of Greater New York, join in a new movement to perpetuate the names of the heroes from their respective localities who lost their lives during the World War by placing tablets for heroes in all the schools.

The memory of the soldiers who lost their lives in the World War was honored by the children and the faculty of the Henry Lomb School of Rochester on Armistice day. Former Major Frederick S. Couchman of the old 27th Division told stories of army life, and incidents and details of the heavy fighting overseas were vividly depicted by him. Tribute was paid to three graduates who gave their lives to the cause.

Twelve trees, each intended as a memorial for a departed comrade, were planted on Armistice Day in Madison Square Park, New York City, by the Metropolitan Post of the American Legion. This was witnessed by relatives of the fallen soldiers.

Armistice Day was celebrated in Queens Borough by the erection of a cross at the graves of the French sailors of the *Marseilles* and *Gloire*, who died while the ships were in this port, during the World War. This took place at Cypress Hills Cemetery. Gaston Leibert, the French Consul General and ex-Senator William A. Clark were the chief speakers.

At the Fox Hills Hospital on Staten Island special exercises were held commemorating Armistice Day for the fifty wounded soldiers stationed there.

Armistice Day was observed in the Brooklyn postoffice by the unveiling of a tablet in honor of the men employed there who had paid the supreme sacrifice in the World War.

After a short business meeting of the Noble-Callaghan Post of the American Legion, Troy, held November 16, 1920 Dr. James Sullivan, the State Historian, addressed the meeting. His subject was "The Preservation of War Records."

# The Quarterly Journal

of the

21-87157

New York State Historical  
Association



Volume II

April 1921

Number 2

Entered as second class mail matter October 22, 1919, at the Post Office at Albany, New York  
under the Act of August 24, 1912.

# NEW YORK STATE HISTORICAL ASSOCIATION

## Quarterly Journal

### Editorial Committee

JAMES SULLIVAN, Managing Editor

DIXON R. FOX

FREDERICK B. RICHARDS

---

---

## CONTENTS

SECTIONALISM IN WRITING HISTORY	- James Sullivan	73
THE ORIGINS OF PRISON REFORM IN NEW YORK STATE	Harry E. Barnes	89
THE SCHOOLMASTER'S LOT AT NEW PALTZ	A. J. F. vanLaer	100
REVIEWS OF BOOKS	- - - - -	105
<i>Harrison, Yates County in the World War; Peterson, Lest We Forget; Eberlin, History of the 311th Infantry; Anon, History of the 307th Field Artillery; Reppy, Rainbow Memories; Bach and Hall, The 4th Division; Riggs and Platt, A History of Battery F. 323d Field Artillery; Duffy, The G. P. F. Book; Sullivan and Tucker, History of the 105th Regiment of Engineers; Mather, History of the 322nd Field Artillery; Robinson, Forging the Sword; Bennell, The Yankee Division; Taylor, New England in France;</i>		
NOTES AND QUERIES	- - - - -	113
NOTICE	- - - - -	139
STATEMENT	- - - - -	140

---

---

Subscription Price \$1.50

Single Numbers 40 cents

Address all contributions and communications to  
New York State Historical Association, Albany.

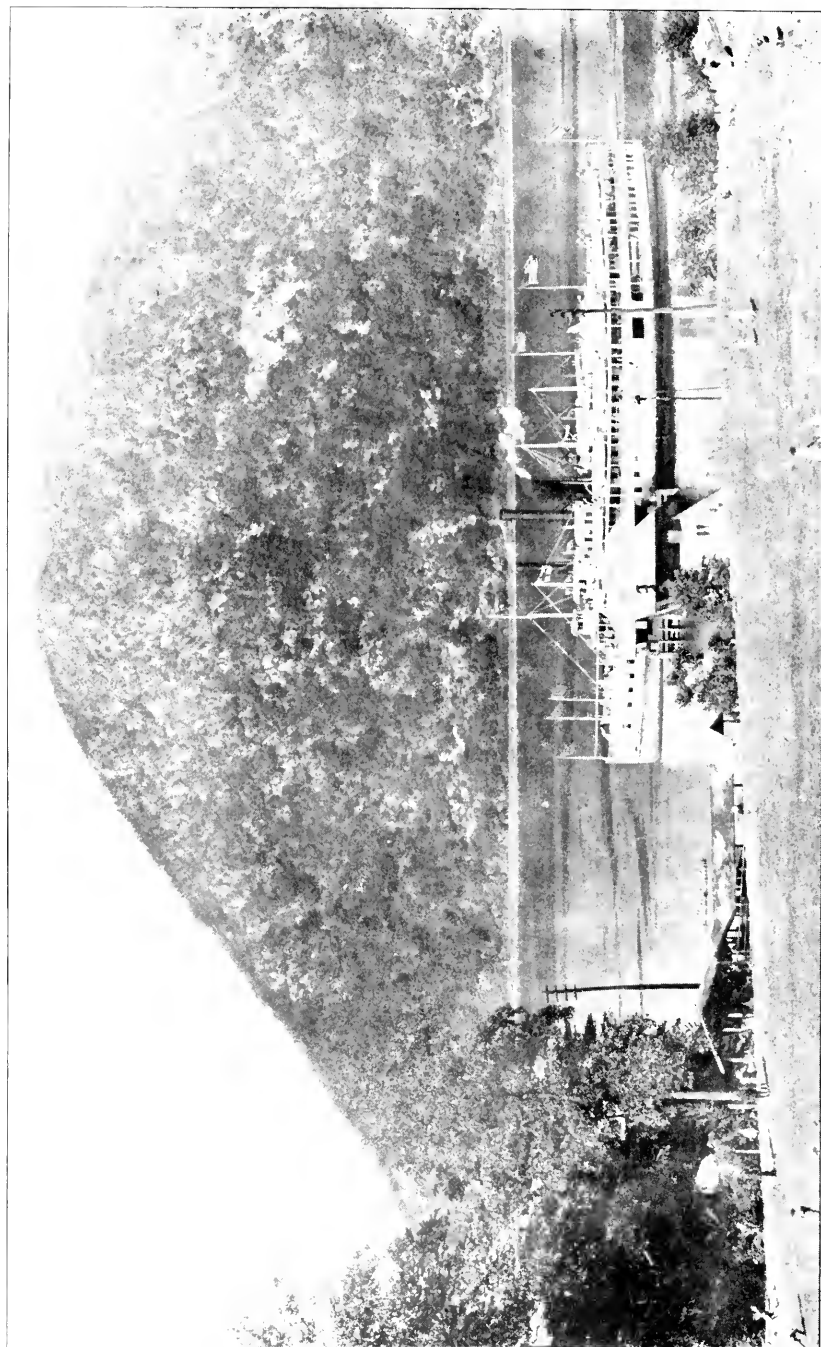




View from Bear Mountain Looking South Across Iona Island With Peekskill in the Distance.







View from the Inn — Looking East Across the Hudson to Anthony's Nose.

---

# The Quarterly Journal

of the New York State Historical Association

---

## SECTIONALISM IN WRITING HISTORY

SHIRLEY AND JOHNSON<sup>1</sup>

There is probably no more common fault found in writers of history than that which we may denominate sectionalism. By this we mean the weakness to which a historian succumbs when he permits himself to treat a given topic from a point of view which is determined by his own love of a given locality, and of the historical personages identified with it. Thus he may quite unintentionally and even unconsciously shape the statement of his facts to reflect glory on the community and its people, and show an astonishing lack of appreciation or even downright prejudice in his attitude toward men or groups who have been identified with other places.

In fact it is no uncommon thing for a historian to start out with the deliberate purpose of proving that his locality and the men from it were of greater importance than any other. With such a motive as a basis he will not only seek to prove the greatness of his community and its people, but he will conceal their shortcomings and defend their vices.

Illustrations of this kind of historical writing are so numerous as to preclude citation. This weakness, however, which leads the historian to commit such faults is not of the historian but of the human being. A well known citizen of a city in this state speaking of a certain newspaper said that it would

<sup>1</sup>An address delivered at the Bear Mountain meeting of the New York Historical Association, October 7, 1920.

defend a criminal if he came from the place where it was published.

To spring to the defense of our own is a fault or a virtue, by whatever name you may wish to call it, which is so common that the historian may not be said to have a monopoly of that characteristic.

Along with this fault or virtue the ordinary mortal combines another. His temptation is not only to praise his own, but he adds to it a strong desire to minimize the accomplishments of men from other places. To diminish their lustre seems to add brilliancy to that of his own beloved locality.

Our present day America is confronted with this problem in an intensified degree. From all parts of our land are coming forth publications singing the praises of the particular unit of the American army which was made up of the soldiers drawn from their locality.

It is of course to be expected that our newspapers would claim the full credit for winning the World War much to the dismay and perhaps anger of our Canadian brethren, but even many of our officially appointed historians seem to be going on the principle laid down by our politicians during a campaign, "to claim everything in sight." Some of them have openly avowed their intention of "making the finest showing they possibly can." Woe unto the historian who doesn't. His locality, state and nation will have little use for him if he does not in popular parlance "lay it on thick". If he is modest, he is going to be subject to the captious attacks of his people. Also, as all the other writers are doing it, he must needs in self-defense follow suit. "Every-body's doing it" is going to be an argument difficult to meet.

Division and regimental historians have begun the out-out, and to the State Historian's desk have already come letters from one historian protesting against the way in which one regiment claims credit which he feels his regiment is entitled to.

Such instances are naturally to be expected as long as men love the community in which they are born or to which they become strongly attached. We instill love of locality and coun-

try in our people, and as long as they have it, a natural tendency to overstate their accomplishments will be observable.

The professional historian, however, should strive constantly to overcome this perfectly natural and human tendency to magnify his own and by contrast depreciate others. Our internationalists will tell you that only when we have the world completely internationalized and our families nationalized will our historians write history without the evils of sectionalism and its allied faults.

The fallacy of their reasoning, however, is shown by the fact only too well known that it is not only against the historian of recent events that we can make the accusation of sectionalism. Nothing would seem to be more remote from modern passion than the Egyptians, Babylonians, Assyrians, Persians, Greeks, Romans, and yet the historians of those peoples write of them with the same hate or love, as the case may be, as they would feel, were they writing of recent events in Ireland, Poland, Russia and Fiume. Sometimes we feel that the Middle Ages are sufficiently remote to permit us to write about the people and countries of those times without sectionalism, but we are sadly disillusioned by many very recent publications. As we approach the period of history designated Modern, we expect sectionalism and we certainly find it. If our own historians write of the Revolutionary War in that spirit, so do those of England and Canada.

The modern descendants of those Tory exiles who now live in Ontario cannot write without the sectional point of view when they treat of that period. Previous to the Civil War one of them wrote with fine irony to a citizen of Cincinnati: "Tell your Republicans there that we Royalists do not deprive a man of political rights because of color."

The celebration of the Tercentenary of the Coming of the Pilgrims has flooded us with several volumes of history mainly characterized by sectionalism. To read much of it one would be led to believe that the eyes of all England were on the Pilgrims when they left, whereas their departure was as little noted as are the doings of many of our present day peculiar sects.

It was pure sectionalism when a clergyman in speaking at the Provincetown celebration led his audience to believe that the Anglo-Saxons had a monopoly of all that was best in government and religious freedom. Subsequent to this another speaker representing the Dutch government laid before the assembled multitude the somewhat astonishing as well as amusing statement that the Pilgrims got their ideas of political and religious liberty in Holland and brought them to this country. Thus at one fell blow was to crumble the foundation of our idea that the Pilgrims brought their ideas of political and religious liberty to this land from England.

The attempt of Professor Usher to disillusion our people with reference to the Pilgrims has met with a storm of protest of the sectional variety. It would seem from this that not only must history be written from the sectional point of view, but that he is little short of a criminal who attempts to set people right.

A member of this Association in a book published a short time ago tried to set forth the truth about New York's share in the Revolution. He may have been guilty of sectionalism in trying to do it, but a reviewer of his book was equally sectional in resenting the attempt.

We are all guilty of sectionalism. You and I, all of us, wish to give the gage of battle when we hear our village, state or nation attacked. It may be said to be almost instinctive. When one of our historical personages is being attacked by an outsider, a power stronger than ourselves immediately impels us to try to work up some kind of defense. Thus at the same time that we are accusing others of sectionalism we are guilty of it ourselves.

The above is of the nature of a confession and also of a preface to some work which I have been doing on the Sir William Johnson papers. Here was a man who loomed large in the colonial history of our country—so large that he was one of two men only during the long period from 1609-1774 who was made a baronet for his services. In the French and Indian Wars which for the colonists covered the middle part of the

eighteenth century few names were better known than that of Johnson. As he was the superintendent of Indian affairs this was very natural. The wars of that century were between the French and their Indian allies and the British and their Indian allies, and it was inevitable that the "Superintendent of Indian Affairs" should play a most important rôle in any matter in which the Indians had a part. This in itself meant a very wide range of participation in public affairs.

His influence over the Indians was conspicuously great. Even historians who pass him over slightly acknowledge that. There were some traits of character, some skill of management which enabled him to acquire a power with the Indians which none of his contemporaries possessed. For the use of this influence he was constantly appealed to by public men from the colonies which surrounded New York. Thus in the public affairs of the colonies Johnson may be said to have occupied over a quarter of a century one of the most strategically important positions. Contemporary newspapers certainly bear witness to this fact and private manuscripts and public documents confirm it.

Why is it therefore that as a man of action he is less well known than others who accomplished less? His death just before the Revolution may in part account for it. His fame was eclipsed by the Revolutionary leaders. His known sympathies with the British government in such matters as the Stamp Act may have hurt him for future fame. The subsequent identification of his son and family adherents with the Tory cause possibly blurred all that he accomplished. The elimination of the Indians as serious factors in American life may have thrown completely in the background matters which earlier were regarded as the all important items of the earlier period.

However this may be, the fact remains that a man important enough to be made a baronet by the king for his services, and one known throughout the colonies in the middle of the eighteenth century was, with but few exceptions, omitted from the school texts on which the adults of the present generation

were brought up, so that even his name is to them generally unknown. When we take into consideration the fact that others far less conspicuous for their services in his time have been made better known, there is little wonder that we hunt for reasons to account for the omission of his name.

Aside from the fact that New York, because of the divergent elements that made up its population, was never a unit "in blowing its own horn" or in singing its own praises, a reasonable explanation is to be found in sectionalism in writing history. Had New York produced from within its own borders an eminent historical writer on the period during which Johnson lived, his deeds and accomplishments would probably have found a conspicuous place in our school texts.

Parkman and Fiske, the two historians who treat best the period in which Johnson lived, are not to be criticized because they do not give credit to Johnson in the amount of space which they devote to him. As a matter of fact they are very liberal in that regard. There is, however, in the attitude of Parkman toward him a certain critical attitude which he probably would not have taken had he as an author been a New Yorker instead of New Englander.

We as New Yorkers are naturally on the lookout for Johnson's points of greatness and we are inclined to overlook his weaknesses. We are prone to side against his enemies. On the other hand Parkman is inclined to stress his failings and support his enemies, especially if the latter happen to come from the section of the country with which Parkman is identified.

Keeping these facts in mind, let us turn to a consideration of Parkman. His reputation as a historian is well known. He is indeed rightly considered great. Still in his treatment of various incidents in Johnson's life, of the battle of Lake George, of Johnson's relations with Shirley and of the capture of Fort Niagara by Johnson, there is observable in him that trace of sectionalism which favors the men identified with New England as against the man from New York.

Parkman's characterization of Johnson, though appreciative



in places, shows a flippancy of statement that he does not use, when he might with equally good reason employ it, about Shirley and other men of the time. "He," says Parkman, (*Montcalm and Wolfe*, I, 298) "liked the society of the great, would intrigue and flatter when he had an end to gain, and fail a rival without looking too closely at the means." Without denying the truth of this statement about Johnson, it is pure sectionalism to use it about him and not to use it about Shirley, for the same remarks are as true of the latter as they are about Johnson. Again, Parkman seems to get a certain relish from his words when he says: "Here—" (at Mount Johnson) (*ibidem*) "for his tastes were not fastidious—presided for many years a Dutch or German wench whom he finally married; and after her death a young Mohawk squaw took her place."

Almost the same words are repeated in Parkman's *Conspiracy of Pontiac* both about his character (I, 97) and about his marital relations (I, 95). Acknowledging the substantial truth of the statements, they are such as can be made about many of Johnson's contemporaries. It is not a difficult thing to do if one wishes to go in for that sort of historical writing. The statements are not so bad as are the evident bias and sectionalism behind them.

By way of contrast let us take Parkman's description of a similar condition about Shirley. Describing him (*Montcalm and Wolfe*, I, 199) he says: "There was a fountain of youth in this old lawyer. A few years before, when he was a boundary commissioner in Paris, he had the indiscretion to marry a young Catholic French girl, the daughter of his landlord." With what a gentle touch this "indiscretion" is handled. No slur about Shirley's tastes not being fastidious.

It cannot be denied that at many places Parkman pays full tribute to Johnson's abilities, but at times he lapses into statements that cannot be proven. In *Montcalm and Wolfe* (I, 84) in speaking of the rewards offered by the French in 1750 for the scalps of certain Englishmen, Parkman says:

"When this reached the ears of William Johnson, on the Mohawk, he wrote to Clinton in evident anxiety for his own

scalp: 'If the French go on so, there is no man can be safe in his own house; for I can at any time get an Indian to kill any man for a small matter. Their going on in that manner is worse than open war' .''

There is absolutely nothing in this quotation from Johnson's letter to show that he was afraid for his own scalp. Nor is there anything in any of the manuscript sources of the same to warrant the implication that Johnson was a coward. On the contrary there is much in the letters sent him by his friends to show that they felt that he was unduly rash in staying on the frontier. Friends of his in Albany repeatedly besought him to come and take safe shelter with them. Had he been afraid for his scalp, as Parkman says, Johnson would certainly have taken the proffered refuge with alacrity.

In the matter of the command of the army destined for the capture of Crown Point there is no doubt that Johnson was anxious to have it. Though protesting in his letters to Shirley his incapacity as a military commander, the spirit of the words shows that he wished to have the command very much. Shirley as governor of Massachusetts had proposed the attack on Crown Point to the ministry and without waiting for a reply had proposed it to his legislative assembly. The latter had received it favorably and without delaying for the arrival of the general commander of all of the colonial forces, Edward Braddock, Shirley had suggested Johnson as Major General in command of the Crown Point expedition. There were evidently tact and strategy in Shirley's move. To appoint a commanding officer from any one of the New England colonies would have made the others jealous. The appointment of Johnson solved this difficulty. It also almost surely insured the support of the Indians of the Five Nations with whom Johnson was generally acknowledged to have great influence.

In the expedition Parkman rightly claims (*o. c.* I, 297), "Massachusetts showed a military activity worthy of the reputation she had won." Even Banyar, Johnson's intimate friend, bears witness in several letters of his to Johnson that Massachusetts was a model which the slow-moving New York

might imitate. There are many reasons why New York dragged behind the New England colonies, and we shall examine them later; but the evidence of her slackness is indisputable.

When Braddock did arrive, he approved Shirley's plan for an attack on Crown Point and also approved of his selection of Johnson as commander. From the other colonies contributing to the expedition Johnson received commissions like that given by Shirley. In addition Braddock made Johnson Sole Superintendent of Indian Affairs.

The motives which led Johnson to accept a military command for which he himself states he was unqualified are not to be found expressly stated in words in any one of his letters. All that we can do is to surmise that he was moved by the same desire for prominence and glory which is common to almost all of us. He may have been influenced by the example of William Pepperrell, a civilian of Maine (then Massachusetts) who with virtually no military training had reduced the fortress of Louisbourg in 1745 and had been made a baronet. Here Johnson may have thought lay a similar opportunity.

He had at least one qualification which no other had and that was his influence with the Indians. His lack of training in a military way he tried to make up for by getting the best men he could find. The most conspicuous of these was William Eyre, recommended to him by Braddock. Eyre probably knew more about military fortifications and artillery, and perhaps more about military matters than any one of the various officers who, the colonies had stipulated, should serve with Johnson. From his letters it can be seen that virtually no step was taken by Johnson in which he did not rely on Eyre. So in a certain sense his military mistakes, if he made any, were the mistakes of Eyre. Subsequent use of Eyre by Loudon at Fort William Henry and his assignment to the charge of the fortifications at Crown Point in 1762 show that Johnson was not alone in his estimate of Eyre's military abilities.

Connecticut had insisted that Phineas Lyman, once a tutor at Yale College and more recently a lawyer,—a raw soldier,

but a vigorous and brave one, no one denies, should be second in command.

These facts it will be well to remember when we come to consider the battle of Lake George.

The preparations for the expedition went on at a snail's pace. Without a reading of the voluminous correspondence it is impossible to realize how exasperating it must have been. The Dutch in and about Albany were not at all cooperative, and when they with their horses and wagons were pressed into service they deserted at the first good opportunity.

In the midst of the preparations news of Braddock's defeat came to hand. How much influence it had on the soldiers under Johnson's command it is impossible to say. His letters of the time are filled with the expressed fears of the effect that it is going to have on them. That it impressed Johnson can be easily perceived in the reading of his letters. That it served to keep before him the possibility of falling into a trap is made only too evident by the constant dinning away on that subject in the lengthy epistles that he received almost daily from his friend Banyar.

Just before describing the battle of Lake George (*o. c.* I. 306) Parkman uses these words: "Little was done to clear the forest in front, though it would give excellent cover to an enemy. Nor did Johnson take much pains to learn the movements of the French in the direction of Crown Point, though he sent scouts towards South Bay and Wood Creek."

Yet Johnson's letters are filled with the difficulties encountered in getting his soldiers to do any labor and he had scouts out almost constantly. A far more capable general than Johnson, Dieskau, was so badly informed by a prisoner that even with his superior training he found himself, much to his surprise, between Johnson on Lake George, and Fort Edward.

The sectionalism of the following words is patent (*o. c.* I. 317). "Johnson received a flesh wound in the thigh, and spent the rest of the day in his tent. Lyman took command; and it is a marvel that he escaped alive, for he was four hours in the heat of the fire, directing and animating the men."

The implication is not concealed. In the *Conspiracy of Pontiac*, I, 96, a similar sentiment is expressed when Parkman says he "gained the Battle of Lake George . . . for which, however, he was entitled to little credit."

Observe the general tone of the following from *Montcalm and Wolfe*, I, 324-326:

Johnson did not follow up his success. He says that his men were tired. Yet five hundred of them had stood still all day, and boats enough for their transportation were lying on the beach. Ten miles down the lake, a path led over a gorge of the mountains to South Bay, where Dieskau had left his canoes and provisions. It needed but a few hours to reach and destroy them; but no such attempt was made. Nor, till a week after, did Johnson send out scouts to learn the strength of the enemy at Ticonderoga. Lyman strongly urged him to make an effort to seize that important pass; but Johnson thought only of holding his own position. "I think," he wrote, "we may expect very shortly a more formidable attack." He made a solid breastwork to defend his camp; and as reinforcements arrived, set them at building a fort on a rising ground by the lake. It is true that just after the battle he was deficient in stores, and had not bateaux enough to move his whole force. It is true, also, that he was wounded, and that he was too jealous of Lyman to delegate the command to him; and so the days passed till, within a fortnight, his nimble enemy were intrenched at Ticonderoga in force enough to defy him.

The Crown Point expedition was a failure disguised under an incidental success. The northern provinces, especially Massachusetts and Connecticut, did what they could to forward it, and after the battle sent a herd of raw recruits to the scene of action. Shirley wrote to Johnson from Oswego; declared that his reasons for not advancing were insufficient, and urged him to push for Ticonderoga at once. Johnson replied that he had not wagons enough, and that his troops were ill-clothed, ill-fed, discontented, insubordinate, and sickly. He complained that discipline was out of the question, because the officers were chosen by popular election; that many of them were no better than the men, unfit for command, and like so many "heads of a mob." The reinforcements began to come in, till, in October, there were thirty-six hundred men in the camp; and as most of them wore summer clothing and had but one thin domestic blanket, they were half frozen in the chill autumn nights.

Johnson called a council of war; and as he was suffering from

inflamed eyes, and was still kept in his tent by his wound, he asked Lyman to preside,—not unwilling, perhaps, to shift the responsibility upon him. After several sessions and much debate, the assembled officers decided that it was inexpedient to proceed. Yet the army lay more than a month longer at the lake, while the disgust of the men increased daily under the rains, frosts, and snows of a dreary November. . .

The whole tenor of these citations is to the effect that Johnson permitted himself to be put out of action by a mere flesh wound and that the braver Lyman won the battle; that Johnson could just as well as not have pushed on to Ticonderoga, but that he gave puerile and senseless excuses for not so doing.

Lyman is given the credit for winning the battle, because he was in command, but when under such command steps were not taken to capture Dieskau's bateaux ten miles distant Johnson is blamed for it.

It is not our purpose to enter into a defense of Johnson's military conduct, but merely to call attention to the fact that Parkman's presentation is marked by the failing of sectionalism. Johnson was not in favor of pressing on to Ticonderoga—his letters show it. Parkman has given some of the reasons, but presented them in such a way as to lead the reader to believe that they amounted to nought. Johnson's army as well as himself was upset by Braddock's defeat. The undercurrent of this runs through his whole correspondence. Worse than all this, however, was the disintegrating effect on the army of the interminable delays in getting started. Nothing so destroys the morale of soldiers as seemingly useless and endless waiting. For this Johnson was not responsible. It was due to the whole vicious system of plural control exercised by the colonial governments.

It is true that Johnson and Lyman did not get along very well together. It is truer to state that Lyman and Eyre did not get along together, and that Johnson sided with Eyre. The Johnson correspondence reveals that, when a council of war was held, the officers including Lyman would vote against proceeding further towards Ticonderoga, but outside of the council some of them, including Lyman, would talk and write otherwise.

The truth of the matter seems to be that the army and the officers, including Johnson, had no stomach for further fighting. The soldiers like most colonists had enlisted for a summer campaign and their spirit was thoroughly broken by the incessant delays, the lack of food and military supplies, and the absence of transportation facilities. Johnson sensed disaster and the votes of his officers, so far as the votes in the council of war are any indication, showed that they felt the same way. If Eyre had been in favor of an advance, Johnson would probably have taken his view.

Shirley's expedition to capture Niagara had even less success than that of Johnson. The circumstances surrounding its abandonment at Oswego are in some respects almost identical with those with which Johnson was confronted. Yet turn to Parkman's narration of this event and see how different his whole tone is when he treats it (*o. c.* II, 8, 10, 11):

Shirley's whole force soon arrived; but not the needful provisions and stores. The machinery of transportation and the commissariat was in the bewildered state inevitable among a peaceful people at the beginning of a war; while the news of Braddock's defeat produced such an effect on the boatmen and the draymen at the carrying-places that the greater part deserted. . . . .

Shirley was but imperfectly informed by his scouts of the unexpected strength of the opposition that awaited him; but he knew enough to see that his position was a difficult one. His movement on Niagara was stopped, first by want of provisions, and secondly because he was checkmated by the troops at Frontenac. He did not despair. Want of courage was not among his failings, and he was but too ready to take risks. He called a council of officers, told them that the total number of men fit for duty was thirteen hundred and seventy-six, and that as soon as provisions enough arrived he would embark for Niagara with six hundred soldiers and as many Indians as possible, leaving the rest to defend Oswego against the expected attack from Fort Frontenac.

"All I am uneasy about is our provisions," writes John Shirley to his friend Morris; "our men have been upon half allowance of bread these three weeks past, and no rum given to 'em. My father yesterday called all the Indians together and made

'em a speech on the subject of General Johnson's engagement, which he calculated to inspire them with a spirit of revenge." After the speech he gave them a bullock for a feast, which they roasted and ate, pretending that they were eating the governor of Canada! Some provisions arriving, orders were given to embark on the next day; but the officers murmured their dissent. The weather was persistently bad, their vessels would not hold half the party, and the bateaux, made only for river navigation, would infallibly founder on the treacherous and stormy lake. "All the field-officers," says John Shirley, "think it too rash an attempt; and I have heard so much of it that I think it my duty to let my father know what I hear." Another council was called; and the general, reluctantly convinced of the danger, put the question whether to go or not. The situation admitted but one reply. The council was of the opinion that for the present the enterprise was impracticable; that Oswego should be strengthened, more vessels built, and preparation made to renew the attempt as soon as spring opened. All thoughts of active operations were now suspended, and during what was left of the season the troops exchanged the musket for the spade, saw, and axe. At the end of October, leaving seven hundred men at Oswego, Shirley returned to Albany, and narrowly escaped drowning on the way, while passing a rapid in a whale-boat, to try the fitness of that species of craft for river navigation.

The excuses offered for Shirley's failure are not offered in the same tone for Johnson, though they well might have been. Want of courage was not one of Shirley's failings, but it was implied as one of Johnson's. Shirley's council of war would not listen to an advance, but that was not Shirley's fault. Neither would Johnson's council consent to an advance, but that *was* Johnson's fault. Shirley wrote to Johnson to go ahead to Ticonderoga in spite of the decision of the council of war, and the implication of Parkman is that Johnson was wrong in not ignoring his council. Shirley obeyed the advice of his own council of war and he was right in so obeying. How Shirley from Oswego could have known what Johnson should or should not do is a question.

On page 12 of volume II of *Montcalm and Wolfe* Parkman says of Shirley:

"Unfortunately for him, he had fallen out with Johnson,



whom he had made what he was, but who now turned against him—a seeming ingratitude not wholly unprovoked.”

This is what Shirley told the Indians, as is shown by the Johnson correspondence, and Parkman accepts it without reservation. Shirley to be sure was responsible for making Johnson Major General of the army to be led against Crown Point, but he had not made him what he was with the Indians—a great power. It was very largely because of Johnson’s influence with the Indians that Shirley had asked him to command the Crown Point expedition, and it was Braddock not Shirley who had made Johnson Sole Superintendent of Indian Affairs. To say therefore without reservation that Shirley had made Johnson what he was is giving undue credit to Shirley.

Parkman does say that Johnson’s ingratitude, as he terms it, was not wholly unprovoked. Shirley’s relations with Johnson might have remained of the best had Shirley not interfered with Johnson’s Indians. These Johnson regarded as his own particular preserve and he resented any interference with them without his permission. Shirley on the other hand seemed to think that because he had been instrumental in making Johnson Major General he could go ahead and do as he pleased with Johnson’s Indians. In the words of our day he thought because he had made Johnson a Major General that Johnson would be a “rubber stamp”, and this Johnson vigorously refused to be.

Johnson undoubtedly had a quality of making very warm friends. No one can read his correspondence without realizing this. Simple French Canadian peasants to whose captive children Johnson had been kind, stray scholars who wrote to him in Latin, scientists like Kalm, generals like Dieskau all showered encomiums on him. He was in the good graces of colonial governors like Clinton, Pownall and Hardy.

Shirley certainly did not have the characteristics which made for him the warm friends that Johnson made for himself; and, when the latter began to fill his letters with the stories of the ill treatment which Shirley had given him in Indian affairs,

there could be little doubt how the trouble between the two would end.

Parkman refers to it as a coalition of Shirley's enemies (*o. c.* II, 15). In another place he calls it a cabal and says that Sir Charles Hardy had painted Shirley's conduct in such colors that the ministry removed him.

With the sectionalism of which you and I as New Yorkers are equally guilty along with Parkman, we shall probably declare that Shirley deserved the debasement. We probably resent Parkman's defence in laying Shirley's fall to a coalition or cabal.

In justice to Parkman it should be stated that occasionally he finds fault with Shirley as (*o. c.* II, 107) in his failure to supply Oswego with wholesome provisions, just as he occasionally finds a good word for Johnson (*o. c.* II, 77) when he says that he was admirably fitted to deal with the Indians. In general, however, in dealing with the two men Parkman exhibits the altogether too common fault of sectionalism.

One would expect in view of what Johnson accomplished at Niagara to hear his praises sung by Parkman. At Niagara it was Prideaux, the British commander, who was put out of commission by being accidently struck and killed by the piece of a bursting shell in his own camp. It was Johnson who took command. The position of Lake George was reversed, but we find no paeans sung over Johnson's capacity or of his bravery in defeating the French or capturing Niagara. Parkman did not like Johnson and he shows it. Thus does sectionalism master even the best of our historians.

JAMES SULLIVAN

## THE ORIGINS OF PRISON REFORM IN NEW YORK STATE<sup>1</sup>

The historical significance of New York State penal institutions in the history of penology is very inadequately understood and appreciated by present-day citizens. Yet, with the possible exception of the Eastern Penitentiary on Cherry Hill in the city of Philadelphia, the prison at Auburn, New York, is the most important penal institution on the American continent. It has furnished the model for practically all of the state prisons of this country and has also exerted a profound influence upon European penal institutions and penological thought. It will be the purpose of this brief resumé of the origins of New York penology to trace the historical background of the development of the Auburn system, to indicate the nature of this type of discipline and to point out its relation to the development of American penology after 1825.

Contrary to the prevailing popular belief, the modern prison, conceived as an institution for the punishment of the great mass of those convicted of crime, is something of very recent origin in social history. Though one reads of prisons in historical literature from the time of Egyptian civilization onward, down to the nineteenth century these were not penal institutions in the modern sense of the word, but were rather places for the incarceration of political or religious offenders and debtors, or for the detention of those who were accused of crime and who were awaiting trial. The punishments employed down to recent times were some form of corporal punishment or fines. There was, then, obviously no need for extensive penal institutions. Gradually, during the eighteenth century, as a product of the growing enlightenment of European society and the humanitarian efforts of the Society of Friends in Europe and America, the barbarities of the system

<sup>1</sup>Abstract of a paper read at the 1920 meeting of the New York State Historical Association, Bear Mountain Inn, October 7, 1920. The full paper as given will be published in an early number of the *Journal of Criminal Law and Criminology*.

of corporal punishment were eliminated and imprisonment at home or abroad introduced as the typical method of punishment for crime.

The origins of the system of punishment in vogue in colonial America must be sought in the practices of the European states during this period. As we are here concerned solely with the English colonies, the situation in England alone needs to be described. There a strangely brutal and cruel system of penal law was in operation, which, at the period of its extreme development, enumerated between two hundred and fifty and three hundred capital crimes and prescribed essentially savage methods of corporal punishment for crimes not capital, such as mutilation, branding, whipping, ducking and the stocks and pillory. Torture was also widely employed in judicial processes. Banishment or deportation was frequently resorted to as a substitute for conventional penalties. It is to the credit of the English colonies that they never were guilty of the same degree of juristic savagery and excesses which characterized the mother country. The notorious "Blue Laws" of the Colony of New Haven provided for but fourteen capital crimes. The East Jersey Code enumerated only eleven capital crimes, and the Duke of York's Laws, introduced into New York and Pennsylvania after the English conquest, prescribed death for but eleven offences. In some cases, however, a few more capital crimes were added during the colonial period. New York, for instance, started the colonial period with eleven capital crimes and ended in 1788 with sixteen.

While the colonies were exempt from some of the severity of the English criminal law, they followed thoroughly the European precedent of barbarous methods of punishment. Corporal punishment and fines were the usual methods employed in the infliction of the revenge of society upon the violator of the law. Branding, mutilation, whipping, ducking, confinement in stocks and pillory and some ingenious, if not diabolical, combinations and variations of these were universally applied to criminals. Only West Jersey from 1681 to 1700 and Pennsylvania from 1684 to 1718 escaped from this cruel

and primitive system. Here the Quakers dominated and their revulsion against the shedding of blood led them to prescribe imprisonment at hard labor instead of corporal punishment for most crimes. They thereby can claim the honor of being regarded as the historic originators of the modern prison system and of having pointed the way for the reforms in the United States that followed the War for Independence. Not only was imprisonment unusual for the criminal classes in the colonial period, but imprisonment, where employed, was used for a class that in the light of modern conceptions do not belong in a penal institution at all, namely, the debtors. Not until nearly the middle of the nineteenth century did imprisonment for debt disappear in this country as a combined result of the humanitarianism and the democracy of the Jacksonian period and of a vigorous campaign carried on by Louis Dwight and the *Prison Discipline Society of Boston*. Other than the debtors the only classes kept in confinement were those accused of crime, and in some cases material witnesses. Nothing better indicates the gulf between colonial and modern jurisprudence and penology than the laws of 1732, 1736 and 1744 in New York State, which stated that it was both too expensive and too risky to imprison those accused of crime for the whole period between court sessions, and authorized magistrates to make summary disposition of the cases by corporal punishment or fine if the accused could not provide bail within twenty-four hours.

The origins of reform in the criminal law and the consequent penological practices in the late eighteenth and early nineteenth centuries must be looked for in a combination of European and American influences. In Europe the English Deists and the French Philosophes attacked the intellectual and theological barbarism which lay back of and upheld the juristic savagery of the time. The implications of this point of view for juristic reform were clearly set forth by Montesquieu in his *Persian Letters* and *Spirit of Laws*, by Beccaria in his *Crimes and Punishments*, and by Bentham in his *Panopticon* and its various appendices and in his writings on the basis of

juristic reform. The practical work of securing the reform of the English criminal code was undertaken and successfully achieved by Sir Samuel Romilly, Sir James Mackintosh, Sir Robert Peel and Sir Thomas Fowell Buxton. The improvement of the condition of the prisons was begun as a result of the labors and writings of John Howard, Elizabeth Fry and their sympathizers and associates.

In America the impetus to reform came from the Pennsylvania Quakers, who had not forgotten that Penn had established humane methods in the very beginning of the colony's existence, and who had bitterly resented the fact that they had been compelled to surrender this advanced system of criminology and penology to get English approval of the colonial court system. As soon as independence had been declared, these Quakers began their campaign for a restoration of the Quaker concepts and practices in Pennsylvania. That they derived some aid and guidance from contemporary European doctrines and achievements cannot be doubted, yet it seems certain that they exerted a reciprocal influence on Europe, and there can be no doubt that prison reform in America was primarily an indigenous product little advanced by European developments.

The Philadelphia Quakers and their sympathetic assistants organized in 1776 the first important prison reform society, *The Philadelphia Society for Assisting Distressed Prisoners*, and the Pennsylvania constitution of 1776 called for a reform of the criminal law. The confusion and vicissitudes of the struggle for independence, including the British capture of Philadelphia, postponed reform measures for a decade, but in 1786 the first important beginning was made in a law that reduced the number of capital crimes and prescribed imprisonment at hard labor as the punishment for many crimes not capital. A year later a new prison reform society was organized under Quaker leadership, *The Philadelphia Society for Alleviating the Miseries of the Public Prisons*, the parent society of the *Pennsylvania Prison Society* and the earliest of permanent prison reform societies. The reformers contin-

ued their efforts. By laws of 1786 to 1794 they secured a complete abolition of the barbarous colonial criminal code and the introduction in 1794 of a criminal code, written by William Bradford, which retained the death penalty for murder in the first degree only and prescribed imprisonment at hard labor for other offences. Through a series of laws from 1790 to 1829 the Pennsylvania system of prison discipline was created and put into operation in two new state penitentiaries, one at Allegheny and the other at Philadelphia. This system, first tried out in the Walnut Street Jail following 1790, was based upon the principle of solitary confinement at hard labor during the entire period of imprisonment. Its great virtue, according to its supporters, was its alleged reformatory effects, it being contended that it produced an unusual degree of penitent retrospection and humble introspection and speedily led to an ardent and effective determination to achieve a personal reformation. Other minor advantages, such as the great ease of maintaining discipline and order, were also brought forward in its support. More important than any other aspect of this reform movement in Pennsylvania for the subject under consideration, however, is the fact that it furnished the precedent for New York emulation and led to the establishment of a modern prison system in that state.

While New York State modeled its reform of the criminal code and penal institutions after the improvements previously secured in Pennsylvania, there were not wanting in New York enlightened citizens who felt the need of throwing off the crudities and savagery inherent in the colonial jurisprudence and penology. Among such leaders in reform were Ambrose Spencer, General Philip Schuyler, Thomas Eddy, De Witt Clinton, John Jay, John Griscom, Cadwallader Colden, Charles G. Haines, Gershom Powers and Samuel M. Hopkins. It is not without some significance that Eddy and Griscom were members of the Society of Friends. In 1794 Thomas Eddy and General Schuyler made a visit to Philadelphia, during which they were received by the Philadelphia reformers and shown the progress made by Pennsylvania in juristic and penal reform. They re-

solved to introduce these improvements into New York State. With the aid of Governor Jay, Ambrose Spencer and others, they secured the passage of the act of March 26, 1796, which reduced the number of capital crimes from sixteen to two, murder and treason, prescribed imprisonment for non-capital crimes and authorized the erection of two state penitentiaries, one in New York City and one at Albany. The New York prison was the only one erected at this time, being situated in Greenwich Village and opened for occupancy in 1797. From the beginning it was well-nigh a complete failure, being erected on the impossible congregate plan with large rooms instead of cells and being far too small for the number of convicts sent there for confinement. Overcrowding quickly demoralized the discipline, and the scandalous prevalence of pardoning soon removed the deterrent effect of potential imprisonment in this institution, thus completing a vicious circle. Between 1797 and 1822 no less than 2819 convicts were pardoned out of the 5069 sent to the prison.

This state of affairs proving intolerable, the legislature passed an act on April 12, 1816, authorizing the erection of a state prison at Auburn, New York, with such improvements on the New York prison as commended themselves to the building commission. At first they followed the same congregate method of design as that which had prevailed in the Newgate Prison in Greenwich Village and the south wing was built chiefly on this plan. By 1819, however, the sentiment for solitary confinement had become powerful. The commissioners were directed by law of that year to continue the construction according to the principle of solitary confinement in single cells, and the north wing was erected accordingly. From 1821 to 1823 the experiment of solitary confinement was made with a part of the prisoners, but, as the cells were too small and no adequate provision was made for work or other exercise, the trial of solitary confinement proved a miserable failure and was abandoned at the end of 1823.

In the place of this discredited system of solitary confinement, the prison authorities, in particular Elam Lynds, John



Cray and Gershom Powers, introduced as a compromise between the solitary and the congregate systems that type of discipline and administration which has come to be known in the history of penology as the Auburn system. It consisted in congregate work during the day in the prison shops and in separation at night in solitary cells, silence being enforced at all times during both day and night. On this account it came to be designated as the "silent system" in distinction from the Pennsylvania or "solitary system". This method of discipline was introduced into the Auburn prison in 1824, and in 1828 into the newly constructed Mount Pleasant prison which has since come to be known as Sing Sing. The special advantages claimed for the Auburn or silent system by its adherents was that it allowed a much better utilization of the economic potentialities of the convicts, since it made possible co-operative work in shops; that it was much less expensive to build a prison constructed on the Auburn plan with its blocks of small inside cells; and that it avoided what were alleged to be the deleterious mental and physical effects of solitary confinement.

Though the Auburn system was in its origins but a variant from the Pennsylvania system, once the former was thoroughly established, it soon assumed the position of an independent and contending system of prison discipline and administration. In addition to its original sponsors, such as Gershom Powers, it found a powerful champion in Louis Dwight, Secretary of the Prison Discipline Society of Boston and the most vigorous and active figure in American prison reform from 1825 to 1850. Though the Pennsylvania system was valiantly defended by Roberts Vaux and the Philadelphia group, and by other prominent men, such as Edward Livingston and Francis Lieber, Dwight emerged victorious from the American phases of the bitter conflict between the two systems. His triumph was due chiefly to the undoubted economic advantages of the Auburn system, to the fact that he had a greater control over prison reform in the country through his organization than that possessed by his opponents, and to his greater aggressiveness. By 1850 all but one (New Jersey) of the

states which had imitated Pennsylvania and adopted the solitary system had abandoned it, and in 1869 Pennsylvania itself began to weaken by authorizing the introduction of the Auburn system into the Western Penitentiary at Allegheny. Both systems were widely studied by European penologists and the Pennsylvania system was regarded with the more favor by these foreign students. It was extensively copied by European governments between 1830 and 1860. The struggle between the two systems was terminated chiefly by the appearance about 1860 of a new and infinitely superior system, the Irish system of progressive classification of prisoners, variation of severity of discipline according to conduct and period of imprisonment, and release on parole. It was developed in Ireland by Sir Walter Crofton following 1853. During the decade of the Civil War a knowledge of this new type of discipline was introduced into this country chiefly as a result of the studies and recommendations of Franklin Sanborn of Concord, Massachusetts. A decade later it was first introduced into this country in the Elmira Reformatory, where it was applied to young first offenders. While as yet it has been but partially introduced into state prison administration in this country, it was so obviously superior to the crude Pennsylvania and Auburn systems that the adherents to the latter did not generally possess the audacity to continue the contest.

As this paper deals only with the historical background of the beginnings of prison reform in New York State, it will be necessary to refrain from describing the interesting and important progress made subsequent to the establishment of the Auburn system. Here would fall the development of the principle of differentiation in the treatment of the criminal population through the provision of institutions for delinquent children, reformatories for young first offenders, hospitals for the criminal insane and custodials for the feeble-minded and idiotic, all of which classes were incarcerated in the jails and prisons in 1825 when guilty of criminal acts. This limitation must of necessity be irritating to a loyal New Yorker, for it excludes notable advances in penology in which New York took

the lead instead of following in the wake of another adjoining commonwealth, as in the case of the establishment of the state prison system. The first institution for juvenile delinquents in this country was opened at Madison Square on January 25, 1825, due to the efforts of local philanthropists such as Thomas Eddy, Charles G. Haines and Cadwallader D. Colden. They were led by Professor John Griscom, a member of the Society of Friends, who had just returned from a visit to Europe during which he had noted the progress being made towards the provision of child-caring institutions in England and Continental Europe. The *New York Prison Association* was organized in 1845 and was the center for much constructive work in prison reform, not only in New York State but in the country at large. Among its most notable leaders were E. C. Wines and Theodore Dwight. Even more significant was the birth of the modern reformatory with the opening of the Elmira Reformatory in 1877. This institution, the product of the energy and synthetic genius of E. C. Wines, Theodore Dwight, Franklin Sanborn, Gideon Hubbell and Z. R. Brockway, embodied in its disciplinary and administrative procedure nearly all the progressive phases of nineteenth century penology, including Sir Charles Lucas' emphasis on reformation, Maconochie's practice of commutation of sentence for good behavior, the grading and classifying system of Sir Walter Crofton and his Irish system, the indeterminate sentence of Whatley, Combe and the brothers Hill, Marsangy's parole system and the emphasis on productive labor by Montesinos and Obermaier. Nor should one forget Mr. Thomas Mott Osborne's *Mutual Welfare League*, recently originated in Auburn and tried out more thoroughly in Sing Sing, and which, in spite of being based on too enthusiastic an optimism as to the innate goodness of the average convict and marred by the lack of sufficient discrimination between different types of convicts, bids fair to be recognized as one of the epoch-making steps in the history of penology and reformation. Again, one must note the extremely significant step recently taken in the establishment of a psychological clinic at Sing Sing under the direction of Dr. Bernard Glueck. Finally, it

is essential to point out that while the "man in the street" still clings to the penological concepts that were dominant in 1825, the informed and progressive penologist of the present day no longer uses the word "punishment" in connection with imprisonment, but regards this procedure in the light of essential, if incomplete, segregation for those classes unfit to be at liberty and as a means of introducing corrective and reformatory measures for those whom the authorities can reasonably hope to reclaim. In other words, deterrence and revenge have been completely replaced by segregation and reformation as the great purposes of imprisonment. And it should not be forgotten that the ever increasing use of the suspended sentence and probation and the parole system is reducing the degree to which the prison is utilized in modern society. Responsible penologists are not lacking who prophesy its ultimate disappearance.

HARRY E. BARNES

### BIBLIOGRAPHICAL NOTE

The following references constitute the chief printed sources and secondary works bearing on the subject of the origins of prison reform in New York State used in the preparation of this paper.

#### A. Printed Sources:-

*Extracts and Remarks on the Subject of the Punishment and Reformation of Criminals, Published by Order of the Society Established in Philadelphia for Alleviating the Miseries of Public Prisons*, February 25, 1790.

Lownes, Caleb, *An Account of the Alteration and Present State of the Penal Laws of Pennsylvania*, Philadelphia, 1792.

Bradford, William. *An Enquiry How Far the Punishment of Death is Necessary in Pennsylvania, with Notes and Illustrations*, Philadelphia, 1793.

*A Statistical View of the Operation of the Penal Code of Pennsylvania*, Philadelphia, 1817.

Vaux, Roberts, *Notices of the Original and Successive Attempts to Improve the Discipline of the Prison at Philadelphia and to Reform the Criminal Code of Pennsylvania*, Philadelphia, 1820.

*Report of the Legislative Committee of the State of New York on the Condition of State Prisons, Journal of the Assembly of the State of New York, 48th Session*, Albany, 1825, pp. 91—133.

Powers, Gershom, *A Brief Account of the Construction, Management and Discipline of the New York State Prison at Auburn*, Auburn, 1826.

Ibid., *Letter of Gershom Powers, Esq., In Answer to a Letter of the Hon. Edward Livingston in Relation to the Auburn State Prison*, Albany, 1829.

*Annual Reports of the Secretary of the Prison Discipline Society of Boston*, 1824—1852.

*Report of the Commissioners on the Penal Code of Pennsylvania with the Accompanying Documents*, Harrisburg, 1828.

*Sketch of the Principal Transactions of the Philadelphia Society for Alleviating the Miseries of Public Prisons*, Philadelphia, 1859.

Barnes, H. E., *A History of the Penal, Reformatory and Correctional Institutions of the State of New Jersey*, pp. 339-638.

Glueck, Bernard, Articles in *Mental Hygiene*, January, April and October, 1918.

#### B, Leading Secondary works.

Barnes, H. E., *History of the Penal, Reformatory and Correctional Institutions of the State of New Jersey. The Evolution of Penology in Pennsylvania*.

De Quiros, B., *Modern Theories of Criminality*.

Ives, George, *A History of Penal Methods*.

Klein, Phillip, *Prison Methods in New York State*.

Lindsley, J. B., *Prison Discipline and Penal Legislation*.

Osborne, T. M., *Society and its Prisons*.

Parmelee, M., *Criminology*.

Parsons, P. A., *Responsibility for Crime*.

Robinson and Beard, *Development of Modern Europe*. Vol. 1, Chap. ix.

Sullivan, J. L. "Note on the Penitentiary System of New York State" in G. E. Baker's edition of *The Works of William H. Seward*. Vol. 11, pp. 173-180.

Sydney, W. C., *England and the English in the Eighteenth Century*.

## THE SCHOOLMASTER'S LOT AT NEW PALTZ

One of the most interesting of the old documents relating to the Huguenot settlement at New Paltz that are preserved in the Memorial House in that village is the copy of the deed of gift to Jean Cottin, dated April 1, 1689. The document belongs to a collection of papers that have been handed down in the Frere, or Freer, family and relates to the granting by the proprietors of the New Paltz patent of a house lot to one of the first two French schoolmasters of the place. The document is of interest in that it describes the location in the village of the first house of which we have any precise knowledge in which school must have been kept. This was less than twelve years after the granting of the New Paltz patent and before any church building was erected.

The document has been reproduced in facsimile in the first and second editions of Ralph Le Fevre's *History of New Paltz* and translations of it have appeared in that *History* and in one of the issues of "The New Paltz Independent" for 1920. Unfortunately, both these translations, which differ materially, are somewhat defective, so that a new translation seems desirable. In the deed the property is described as situated on the left side of Huguenot street, between the lot reserved for the building of a church and a low lying "cripplebush", or thicket, or swamp north. In the original text the lot is referred to as *une masure*, which in the above mentioned translations has been variously rendered as a *cottage*, or a *cabin*, implying that the proprietors made a gift of a house as well as of a lot, whereas the use of the word in the text makes it perfectly clear that nothing but a lot was conveyed. Another mistake in the above mentioned translations to which attention should be called is the date, which has erroneously been given as August 1, instead of April 1, 1689. The property was conveyed by Jean Cottin in 1701<sup>1</sup> to Hugo Freer, who some years later built a substantial one-story stone house, known as the old

Freer homestead, which is still standing and occupied as a residence. Pictures of this house appear on page 348 of Le Fevre's *History* and opposite page 280 of the *Twenty-fifth Annual Report of the American Scenic and Historic Preservation Society*, 1920.<sup>2</sup>

A transcription of the French text and a new translation of the document are as follows:

### TEXT

Nous Soubsignez Messieurs Habittans proprietaires des douze part du village du Nouveaux palle despandance de Kingtonne Comtez de Ulster province de Nouvel York, Certifions que de Nos bonnes volonte et pour faire plaisir a Jean Cottin Maistre d'escolle dudit palle, Nous Luy avons donnez gratuitement une petite Masure pour Luy bastir un Logis Scituez audit Palle au bout de la Rue a main gauche, proche le grand Crouspelbosse tenant d'une Liziere a La place reservez pour bastir une Eglise en Continuant en droiteur Jusques au bas et sur le bord du Crouspelbose, d'autre Liziere Jusques au bas au bord dudit Crouspelbose regardant du Cottez du Nort; d'un bout aboutissant sur La Rue et Continuant en droiteur Jusques en bas et sur le bord dudit Crouspelbose, d'autre bout regardant vers Le Soleil Couchant et allant Jusques en bas sur le bord du Crouspelbose et ladite Massure permettons des AuJourdhuy audit Cottin qu'il s'en Mette et entre en possessions pour en Jouir a tousjours sans troubler Luy et Les Siens Comme estant Son propre bien permettons aussy audit Cottin de Couper son bois de Chauffage et bois pour bastir ou Il trouvera a propos dans Les bois dudit palle et ce pour tousjours Luy et Les Siens de meme aussy permettons pour tousjours audit Cottin Luy et Les siens qu'il pourra mettre dans les bois dudit palle pour le pasturage deux vache[s] et leur veaux et une Cavale et son pou-

<sup>1</sup>So Le Fevre says. I wonder if this should be 1707, when the copy of the deed of gift to Cottin was made.

<sup>2</sup>On p. 298 To this Report the house is described as standing on the side of Huguenot street opposite the Memorial House.

lain. Nous proprietaires et au meme temp de nos acord[s] et  
 parmie Nos Acommodations pour le partage et agrandissement  
 de Nos Massures Nous Avons reservez La susdit petite Masure  
 et L'avons donnez Comme est cy dessus dit. Neantmoins Nous  
 voulons et entendons que sy au cas Ledit Cottin vouloit vendre  
 sa dite Masure Il ne La pourra vendre qu'a des personnes de  
 bonnes vies et meurs et qu'il [qui] nous agreront et aurons  
 aussy La preference Ce qui est escrit entre ligne est aprobez  
 Nous ne somme[s] obligez [de] retenir l[e]d[it] Cottin pour  
 Maistre d'escole autant que nous trouvrons a propos de tous ce  
 que dit cydessus avons tous consenty et ledit Cottin a aussy tous  
 aceptez fait audit palle le premier avril mil six cens quatre vingt  
 neuf a Conditions que ladite Massure sera sujet au Corvez du  
 village ainsy signez Abraham hasbroucq pierre doio Jean has-  
 broucq a fait sa mareq ainsy HB hugue frere a fait sa mareq  
 ainsy x Abraham du bois Isaac du bois Louis du bois Anthoine  
 Crespel Louis beviere Lisbette doyou a fait sa mareq ainsy C D  
 [or E. D. ?]

Nous Anthoine Crespel et Estienne Gacherie Certifions que  
 Cest [cette] Copie est veritable et Juste et Conforme a L'ori-  
 ginal en foy de quoy nous avons signez ces present a Kingtonne  
 ce q<sup>e</sup> Jour d'octobre 1707

Antoin Crespel  
 Estienne Gacherie

In the presence of me

Evert Wynkoop Justis peace

### *Translation*

We, the undersigned gentlemen, inhabitants and proprietors  
 of the twelve parts of the village of New Paltz, district of Kings-  
 ton, county of Ulster, province of New York, certify that of  
 our good will [and pleasure] and in order to gratify Jean Cot-  
 tin, schoolmaster of the said Paltz, we have graciously granted to  
 him a small lot to build himself a dwelling, situated at the said  
 Paltz, at the end of the street, on the left hand, near the large  
 cripplebush, adjoining on one side the place reserved for build-  
 ing a church and continuing in a straight line down to the edge  
 of the cripplebush; [adjoining] on the other side, down to



the lower end, the edge of the said cripplebush, looking toward the north; abutting at one end on the street and continuing straight down to the edge of the said cripplebush; [abutting] at the other end, looking toward the west and going down, on the edge of the cripplebush. And we permit the said Cottin from this day forth to enter upon and take possession of the said lot, to enjoy the same forever as his own property, without our troubling him or his heirs. We also grant permission to the said Cottin to cut firewood or timber for building in the woods of the said Paltz wherever he shall see fit, and this for himself and his heirs forever. We also grant permission to the said Cottin and his heirs forever to put out to pasture in the woods of the said Paltz two cows and their calves and one mare and colt. We, the proprietors, at the time of our agreement and among the arrangements for the division and enlargement of our lots, reserved the above mentioned small lot and have granted it as hereinbefore stated. Nevertheless, it is our will and understanding that in case the said Cottin should wish to sell the said lot, he shall not have the right to sell it except to persons of good life and morals, who shall be agreeable to us and also that we shall have the preference. (What is written between the lines is approved).<sup>1</sup> We shall not be bound to keep Mr. Cottin as schoolmaster any longer than we shall deem proper. All that is above written is agreed to by all of us and is also accepted by the said Cottin. Done at the said Paltz, the first of April one thousand six hundred and eighty-nine, upon condition that the said lot shall be subject to the *corvees*<sup>2</sup> of the village. Thus signed: Abraham Hasbroucq, Pierre Doio, Jean Hasbroucq has made his mark thus HB, Hugue Frere has made his mark thus x, Abraham du Bois, Isaac du Bois, Louis de Bois, Anthoine Crespel, Louis Beviere, Libette Doyau has made her mark E D (or C D?)

<sup>1</sup>This probably applies to the following sentence, which has no connection with the document.

<sup>2</sup>Road work.

We, Anthoine Crespel and Estienne Gacherie, certify that this copy is true and correct and agrees with the original. In witness whereof we have signed these presents at Kingston, the 9th day of October 1707.

Antoin Crespel

Estienne Gacherie

In the presence of me

Evert Wijnkoop Justis peace

A. J. F. VAN LAER.

## REVIEWS OF BOOKS

*Yates County in the World War 1917-1918.* (Compiled and published by E. D. HARRISON, Penn Yan, N. Y. 1921. Pp. 120. Illustrations.)

This quarto volume is with but few exceptions everything that it should be for a work of this kind. It contains a list of the official inductions under the selective service law; the advisory and draft boards; the registrants of June 5, August 24, and September 12, 1918; a list of men from the county who were in the regular army at the time of the declaration of war, April 6, 1917, and an account of their military careers; similar lists and accounts arranged by towns of those who enlisted and those who were selected, and the camps in which they were trained. In addition to these we find the list and careers of Yates county physicians who were commissioned as officers; men who entered the Canadian service; those who entered the Y. M. C. A.; and women who served as nurses. These are followed by accounts of the county's part in the work of the Red Cross, Food Administration, Fuel Administration, War Chest, Liberty Loan Campaigns, Four Minute Men, the Roster of Company O of the New York National Guard, and of the Soldiers and Sailors Memorial Hospital of Yates County.

Mr. Harrison has been particularly successful in getting such full accounts of the military careers of the soldiers. That there were some which he could not get is evidently no fault of his own, but of a silly spirit prevalent with some men who think they acquire a sort of big boy credit by replying "I want to forget the war". It is also remarkable how many photographs of the men the author has succeeded in obtaining. This is the kind of book that not only the present but future generations will thank the author for having compiled. It should serve as a model for every county in the state.

*"Lest We Forget." The Record of Chautauqua County's Own.* By MAJOR A. BARTHOLDI PETERSON, Editor in Chief. (Published under the auspices of the Chatauqua County Post, American Legion. [1921.] Pp. 126. Illustrated)

This quarto pamphlet, with numerous illustrations and advertisements, contains eight chapters devoted to the early war days in Chautauqua county, the history of the 27th, 77th and 78th and 81st Divisions, a conclusion devoted to armistice day, a chronological table of events in Jamestown (the principal city of the county) during the war, and the principal dates of the war.

As an account of Chautauqua's part in the World War it is a great disappointment. There is no list of the names of the men and women who participated as officers, soldiers and nurses, no account of the liberty loan and various auxiliary drives. In fact the reader gets virtually no notion of what Chautauqua county did in the World War. It is an example of what a work of this kind should not be.

*History of the 311th Infantry (78th Division.)* [By CAPTAIN BARNARD EBERLIN.] Flavigny-sur-Ozérain, Côte d'Or; France. (Printed by J. Delorme, Dijon, France. [1919.] Pp. 135. Maps.)

This somewhat unusual publication gives an account of a unit which was about equally made up of men from New York and New Jersey with small numbers from thirty-nine other states and one from Canada. The compilation was in response to an order from Division Headquarters that each organization should prepare such a history. The history is told in eleven chapters arranged chronologically and seven appendices which are given to general orders, rosters of officers and companies, distinguished service honors, citations, and casualties.

The work has the advantage of having been compiled contemporaneously with the events narrated, but this method carries with it the disadvantage of not giving the author a chance for more mature judgment in the matter of method. For example, it is to be regretted that in listing the names in the rosters the places or even states from which the men came are not given.

*History of the 307th Field Artillery, 1917-1919.* (Privately printed. No author's or publisher's name given. No date. Pp. 296. Illustrations and maps.)

This regiment which was largely made up of men from New York and also of a very good number from New Jersey was a part of the 78th Division. The work is arranged by the history of the various batteries which made up the regiment (A, B, C, D, E, F.), the headquarters and the supply companies, and the medical detachment. This method of small unit narratives gives a considerable variety of treatment. Some of the writers confine themselves closely to military details while others give considerable space to observations on French life. The usual statistical material giving rosters, casualties et cetera is included.

*Rainbow Memories.* Character Sketches and History of the First Battalion of the 166th Infantry of the 42nd Division. By LIEUTENANT ALISON REPPY. (Privately published by the Executive Committee of the First Battalion, 1919. Pp. 120. With illustrations and maps.)

The 166th Infantry of the 42nd Division was not a special New York unit of the well known Rainbow Division though there were some New Yorkers in it. This history, however, is an excellent example of the history of the participation of a small unit in the World War. The account is popular; in fact it is not intended to be a contribution to the study of military tactics. Its conspicuous feature is the space devoted to the individual biographies of many of the members of the battalion. These with the numerous photographs and other illustrations make the volume what its title implies: Rainbow Memories for the members of the battalion to revive in the years to come.

*The Fourth Division: Its Services and Achievements in the World War.* By CHRISTIAN A. BACH and HENRY NOBLE HALL. (Issued by the Division through the Country Life Press, Garden City, Long Island, N. Y. 1920. Pp. xvi, 368. Illustrated and maps.)

This volume is a model of that which a popular history of a division should be. On a background of military accuracy there is placed a popular running narrative of a kind that forms very entertaining reading. Perhaps the fact that Colonel Bach was the Chief of Staff of the 4th Division and Mr. Hall the war correspondent for the London Times accounts for this excellent result.

The somewhat popularly phrased chapter headings are followed by chapters of interesting material, but the authors never let the reader forget that each statement is supported by official reports, for in the margin beside the text are small figures referring to the authorities listed at the back of the volume. A bibliography and several appendices, giving lists of officers, decorations, citations and a roll of honor, follow the text. There is also that which is rare in volumes of this kind: an excellent index.

The 4th Division was one of those which had for its nucleus certain units of the regular army. Round these the division was built up of men drawn from every state in the Union. The training of these men in this country, their trip to England and France, their training with British and French troops, their participation in the fighting and their final return are well worth reading about.

*A History of Battery F. 323d Field Artillery.* By McDONALD H. RIGGS and RUTHERFORD H. PLATT, JR. (Cleveland, Ohio. Privately printed by John B. Dempsey, [1920.] Pp. xx, 154. Illustrations.)

This battery was largely made up of Pennsylvania men with others in smaller numbers from Ohio and Kentucky. Lieutenant Platt, one of the authors is a New York man and with a very few others from that state represents New York's con-

tribution in men to the unit. In character the account is lacking in the technical military details found in other works and has more of the character of a pleasant narrative of events reminiscent of the daily history of the battery. It is a well told story.

*The G. P. F. Book: Regimental History of the Three Hundred and Third Field Artillery.* By the G. P. F. BOARD, LIEUTENANT WARD E. DUFFY, Editor in Chief. (No place of publication or publisher's name given. No date. Pp. 364. Illustrations and maps.)

The history of this unit which was largely made up of men from New England, with some men from New York and other states, is in form like a college annual or the year book of a secret fraternity. Very little space is devoted to the narrative history of each battery, but the book is replete with poems, comic pictures, "skits" on the men, et cetera. It is the sort of book that the members of the regiment and their children will enjoy in the days to come. The personal element is all predominating and as a regimental history it is not to be taken too seriously, though there is a mass of material which gives experiences which would never be found in a history of the more strictly military type.

The name "G. P. F.", is taken from the type of gun used known in French as the "Grande Portée Filloux" the last word being the name of the inventor and the first two meaning "long range".

*The History of the 105th Regiment of Engineers.* Divisional Engineers of the "Old Hickory" (30th) Division. Compiled by WILLARD P. SULLIVAN and HARRY TUCKER. (New York: George H. Doran Company, [1919]. Pp. 466. Illustrations, maps and charts.)

Though there were not many New Yorkers in the 30th Division the book is reviewed in these columns because it is one of the very best types of that which a regimental history should

be. It is scientific and statistical, but in spite of that, the narratives of the actions in which the unit took part are told in a way that interests the reader. There may be some items which the authors have omitted, but no reviewer not a military expert would discover them.

Numerous group photographs are inserted and individual photographs of the officers are given. At the end of the volume is a pictorial section showing the photographic history of the regiment from the time of the beginning of its training camp activities until its return from overseas.

*History of the 322nd Field Artillery.* [CAPTAIN PHILIP R. MATHER, Editor in Chief.] (New Haven: Yale University Press. 1920. Pp. 511. With illustrations and maps.)

This unit was mainly made up of men from Ohio and it is only occasionally that we come across the name of a man from New York. As a work it is not so technical as the *History of the 105th Engineers*, nor so popular as the *Rainbow Memories* both mentioned above.

The method of compilation is interesting in that it shows the foresight used by some regimental commanders in issuing orders at the very beginning of the organization of our military forces so that an accurate historical account of the unit might be kept. This is so much more satisfactory than the method only too frequently employed of trying to write the history of a unit for which no provision was made in advance for the gathering of data.

*Forging the Sword: The Story of Camp Devens.* By WILLIAM J. ROBINSON, (No place of publication and no publisher's name given. Printed by the Rumford Press, Concord, N. H. 1920. Pp. xi, 172. Illustrations)

Camp Devens was to New England what Plattsburgh was to New York. A goodly number of our New York men were trained there. The author who was the *Boston Globe* correspondent at the camp has told the story in very readable form.



It has the newspaper quality of touching on the high lights. Much of the material had already appeared in substance in the columns of the *Boston Globe* which took great pride in this New England camp and published nearly three quarters of a million words of news regarding the troops at Camp Devens alone. In this respect New England as usual outstrips our other localities. She certainly takes care of her own when it comes to writing history.

The 76th Division was organized and trained at Camp Devens and after it was sent abroad the camp was made the center for training the 12th Division. After the war was over Camp Devens was busy as a demobilization center. The account of the work of demobilizing is one of the most graphic in the book and then as the author says the camp "was turned from a busy city to an almost deserted village".

*History of the Yankee Division.* By HARRY A. BENWELL. (Boston: The Cornhill Company. 1919. Pp. xiii, 283. Illustrations)

*New England in France, 1917—1919: A History of the Twenty-sixth Division, U. S. A.* By MAJOR EMERSON GIFFORD TAYLOR, Official Historian. (Boston: Houghton Mifflin Company. 1920. Illustrations and maps.)

These two accounts of New England's own 26th Division are in decided contrast. The first is a popular account such as might appear in the columns of a newspaper. In fact much of the material did come out serially in the *Boston Sunday Advertiser, and American* and the *Boston American*. Nevertheless it is an excellent piece of work and compares favorably in interest with the second work. Major Taylor, however, as an author has the advantage in his ability to tell a military history. With this he has combined the quality, not always found in army men, of telling it in an interesting style. The reader who completes this volume will lay it down with a feeling that he has not only covered the history of the 26th Division, but that he has learned about many of the details of the war in general. The author never gets away from his

authorities as his careful footnotes bear witness. An excellent index closes the volume.

Taken together it makes us in New York realize that we have some distance to go in compiling equally good volumes about the history of the units which came from the Empire State. No good history of our 27th has as yet appeared and those which have appeared about our other divisions do not equal that by Major Taylor.

## NOTES AND QUERIES

### PERSONAL

Wallace E. Caldwell, Ph. D., of the Department of History of Columbia University, gave a series of seven lectures at the Bedford Hills Community House on a survey of American History.

Mr. Arthur J. Weise, aged 83, formerly of Troy, died at Bernardsville, N. J., January 7, 1921. The deceased was a historian of note, having written histories of the city of Albany and of the city of Troy.

Poultney Bigelow, author of the *German History* (1806-1848) and late Professor of International Law at Boston University, sailed on March 15th from San Francisco for a fifth and final visit to the Far East. His principal purpose is to revise his book, *Children of the Nations*, in the light of Japan's new departure in matters of colonization.

### HISTORICAL SOCIETIES AND CLUBS

The Mohawk Valley Historical Association now numbers among its members Princess White Deer, a full blooded Indian Princess of the Royal Blood of the Mohawk.

A room in the Schenectady Historical Society building at 13 Union Street has been decorated and furnished in colonial style with articles owned or borrowed by the society and is now open every day to the public.

At the regular monthly meetings of the Liverpool Historical Society the following among other papers was read: "The Great Lake Country" by Mrs Herbert Smith.

Plans are being worked out by directors of the Onondaga Historical Association to open to the public every day the building at No. 311 Montgomery Street, Syracuse. Four floors of the building, donated by the late William Kirkpatrick, contain many interesting historical objects which are of value to students as well as older persons.

The Olean Historical Society has been incorporated under the laws of the State with the following directors: Hon. Frank N. Godfrey, B. U. Taylor, Richmond C. Hill, W. M. Abrams, John P. Herrick, Mrs. William Kinley, Mrs. L. H. Ballard, Mrs. C. W. Wallis and Mrs. S. H. Bradley. At a meeting of the directors, the following officers were elected: president, John P. Herrick; vice-president, Mrs. S. H. Bradley; secretary and treasurer, Richmond C. Hill; assistant secretary and treasurer, Mrs. William Kinley. It is planned to arrange for a historical room for the society in the Olean Carnegie Library.

The Olean Historical Association is working for the movement to establish an Allegany State Park. Richmond C. Hill, secretary of the society and city historian, was a speaker at a meeting in the interests of the park project held in Salamanca on Saturday, February 19th. A bill to create this park has been introduced in the Senate by Senator D. H. Ames and in the Assembly by Joseph A. McGinnies.

Mrs. Jeremiah T. Lockwood, on behalf of the White Plains Chapter, Daughters of the American Revolution, has submitted the following report to the Board of Supervisors: "The Board of Managers of the Washington's Headquarters have the honor to report that permanent improvements to the grounds surrounding the headquarters have been made this past year. The \$250.00 appropriated by the county for this purpose, \$250.00 from the White Plains Chapter, D. A. R. and private subscriptions have made this possible. Drain pipes have been laid, over 200 feet of terrace wall rebuilt and a start made to carry out the simple landscape treatment adopted by the Board of Managers. Many large ornamental shrubs and hardy plants have also been set out. The Revolutionary relics which have been given or lent are of unusual value and interest, and are, we think, advantageously displayed. The House is in charge of an excellent caretaker and its doors are open to visitors every day of the week except Monday. Groups of pupils from the schools of adjacent cities and villages and New York City are numbered among its many guests. The appropria-

tion asked for this year will cover continued permanent improvement to the grounds including fence around the same."

At the regular meetings of the Boonville Historical Club the following topics have been taken up: January 4th, "Physical Features of Oneida County"; January 17th, "Discoveries in Oneida County"; January 31st, "Indians of Oneida County"; February 14th, "Important Personages of Oneida County"; February 28th, "American Poets of the Soil".

The second winter series of meetings and entertainments by the Buffalo Historical Society had among other addresses one on January 25th, entitled "What About Canada?" by Justice W. R. Riddell of the supreme court of Ontario.

Among other topics at the regular meetings of the Albion Historical Club were two on February 14, entitled "Albion Community Work" by Miss Achilles, and "The General Need of Community Work" by Dr. Cora B. Lattin.

The Finnish Historical Society of America was organized in Brooklyn, on November 15th, 1920, with the aim of collecting data concerning Finns in this country. The first Finns arrived in America in 1627, when with the Swedes they settled at the mouth of the Delaware river and in 1638 they established the Swedish-Finnish colony of New Sweden, where Philadelphia is now located. The new society will incorporate in the State of New York, and when it has enough members to finance it, it will start active work by furthering historical research and publishing informational articles about the Finns in this country. The following officers were elected: Axel Solitander (Consul General of Finland), president; Toivo H. Nekton (lawyer), vice-president; Victor Pohjola (merchant), treasurer; Rev. Solomon Illmonen (Finnish Ev. Luth. Church of Brooklyn), secretary; E. A. Hedman (banker), Rev. Kalle Makinen (Finnish Ev. Luth. Church of Harlem), and A. Riippa (manager of the Finnish section of the Foreign Language Information Service).

The Madison County Historical Society commemorated the 300th Anniversary of the Landing of the Pilgrims at their meeting on December 15th. Papers and addresses were given

by members of the Shenandoah Chapter, D. A. R. and children of that society. The program was in charge of Mrs. M. J. Dewey.

At the meeting of the Huntington Historical Society held December 22, 1920, the three hundredth anniversary of the Landing of the Pilgrims was commemorated. The Hon. L. Bradford Prince, founder of the society, was the principal speaker.

The Nassau Historical and Genealogical Society held its annual meeting and election of officers December 23rd, 1920, at Freeport. Chauncey L. Ditmars, official historian of the Town of Babylon, delivered an address on the historical features of Nassau County. The following officers were elected: James S. Cooley, M. D., Mineola, president; Frank A. Coles, Glen Cove, vice-president; Jessie Merritt, Farmingdale, secretary; and George D. A. Combes, Rockville Centre, treasurer.

At the January meeting of the Daughters of Columbia County Historical Society, held at New York City, the list of topics for prize essays to be written by high school pupils in the county were read. Two prizes will go to each school. The topics for each town are as follows: Philmont, "Famous Men of Columbia County" and "Then and Now"; Hudson, "Lafayette's Visit to Hudson in 1824" and "Indian Lore of Columbia County"; Chatham, "Old Spencertown" and "The King's District"; Kinderhook, "Lindenwald, the Home of Martin Van Buren" and "Coaching Days in Old Kinderhook"; Valatie, "The Founding and Settling of Valatie" and "The Part Valatie Boys Took in the World War"; Hillsdale, "The Harlem Railroad", "Schools and Churches in This Section" and "The Columbia Turnpike and the Boundary Disputes between New York and Massachusetts"; New Lebanon, "The History of Columbia Hall at Lebanon Springs" and "Unity Lodge".

The Oneida Historical Society, at its annual meeting on January 10th, took steps to join with the Mohawk Valley Historical Association in the celebration of the Battle of Oriskany at the Herkimer Homestead, August 6th. The Hon. P. C. J. DeAngelis was again chosen as president and the others elected

were: vice-presidents, Frederick T. Proctor, Isaac N. Maynard, William Pierrepont White; recording secretary, George E. Denison; corresponding secretary, William M. Storrs; librarian, William H. DeShon; treasurer, William C. Wright. Dr. Brokaw, the corresponding secretary was requested to prepare material for the 1921 year book.

The January meetings of the Camden Historical Club were held on the 11th and the 24th and the topics were as follows: "Europe's Utopia" by Mrs. Russell, and "Glimpses of American Fiction" by Mrs. R. K. Sheffield.

The Onondaga Historical Association gave a reception in its rooms January 13th, in honor of its honorary president, the Rev. William M. Beauchamp, and librarian, L. Leonora Goodrich. John T. Roberts and Dr. John Van Duyn gave tributes to the honorary guests.

Dr. F. H. Severance of Buffalo lectured before the Rochester Historical Society on January 14th on "France as I Found It in 1920".

On January 17, at the home of the Huntington Historical Society, a series of papers relating to the work done in Huntington Township for the recent war was given. The papers were read by Mrs. Henry H. Saylor, former president of the Huntington Red Cross; Mrs. Frank W. Shadbolt, President of the local branch of the Needlework Guild; and Mrs. Joseph Hewlett Willets of the Cold Spring Harbor Sewing Club.

The trustees of the Montgomery County Historical Society met Monday evening, January 17th. Ten new members were received; the report of the house and grounds committee was given by Fred R. Greene; and John E. Wyman, the curator, reported a number of manuscripts and papers which have come into his possession, containing a large amount of Revolutionary and pre-Revolutionary matter.

Charles A. Ditmas, president of the Kings County Historical Society, spoke on "Colonial and Revolutionary New York" at the annual meeting of the Prospect Heights Citizens' Association, January 17th. He described the character of the early builders of this city, giving an historical review of the

growth of the metropolis. The following officers were elected; Alfred G. Reeves, president; Judson G. Wall, first vice-president, Rufus T. Griggs, second vice-president; Bertram C. Smith, third vice-president; Charles D. McBride, secretary, and Frank L. Sniffin, treasurer.

The annual meeting of the Livingston County Historical Society was held January 18th at Avon.

At the annual meeting of the Madison County Historical Association, held January 19th, the following officers were elected: R. J. Fish, president; B. Fitch Tompkins, first vice-president; C. A. Hitchcock, second vice-president; Mrs. W. W. Warr, third vice-president; S. A. Maxon, secretary; Miss Addie Rockwell, corresponding secretary; H. D. Fearon, treasurer. B. Fitch Tompkins, official city and county historian, gave an interesting account of "The Part Madison County Played in the Great War." It was reported that the society is in a prosperous condition and that a building will be erected at some future date.

At the annual meeting of the Empire State Society, Sons of the American Revolution, Newtown Battle Chapter, held January 29th, the need of a county historical society for the purpose of preserving records and articles of interest, connected with the pioneer settlement and early history of the locality, was presented by H. H. Hoffman. Judge Charles B. Swartwood and Dr. A. W. Booth were appointed to formulate plans for such an organization. Professor Mould, of Elmira College, gave an interesting talk on "The Pilgrims". Officers for the ensuing year are as follows: president, J. A. Secor; first vice-president, J. L. Churchill; second vice-president, H. H. Bickford; secretary, G. M. Diven; treasurer, Charles L. Hart; registrar, S. L. Meddaugh; historian, E. B. Billings; chaplain, C. E. Howell.

The American Irish Historical Society held its annual dinner on Saturday evening, January 22, at Delmonico's, Manhattan. Bishop Shahan of Washington, D. C. and United States Senator Reed of Missouri, were among the speakers.

The annual meeting of the Historical Society of Seneca Falls was held Monday evening, January 24th.



Schenectady, Fulton and Montgomery Historical Societies observed the Tercentenary of the Landing of the Pilgrims in the Schenectady County Historical Society rooms, Schenectady, on January 28th. Andrew B. Humphrey of New York, representing the Sulgrave Institution, spoke on the history and influence of the Pilgrims.

A pageant depicting the history and development of nursing from the time of the Greeks up to the present day was given under the auspices of the Genesee Valley Nurses' Association at the Catherine Strong Hall, Rochester, on the evening of November 29th and repeated in the auditorium of East High School on January 28th. The performance of the pageant was planned in observance of the centennial of the birth of Florence Nightingale and in the belief that it would result in winning recruits to the nursing profession.

Mr. George Pople was re-elected president of the Flushing Historical Society at the annual meeting held January 31st. The other officers elected were: L. Bradford Prince, first vice-president; Harvey K. Lines, second vice-president; Col. Albert E. Sholes, third vice-president; George S. Halleran, recording secretary; Robert E. Parsons, corresponding secretary; Miss Fannie C. Lowden, treasurer. Mr. Pople reported that Borough President Connolly had given his consent for the Society to use two rooms on the ground floor of the Flushing Town Hall and the Society will take possession of its new quarters very shortly.

The trustees of the American Scenic and Historic Preservation Society at their twenty-sixth annual election, held February 1st, re-elected Mrs. E. H. Harriman, honorary president; Dr. George F. Kunz, president; Col. Henry W. Sackett, Dr. Herbert L. Bridgman and Reginald P. Bolton, vice-presidents; Capt. N. Taylor Phillips, treasurer; Henry E. Gregory, counsel; and Dr. Edward Hagaman Hall, secretary.

The annual President's Day and Musical of the Daughters of Columbia County Historical Society was held at the Hotel McAlpin, New York City, on Tuesday afternoon, February

1st. The guests of honor were Mrs. Harry Lilly, President of the New York City Federation of Women's Clubs, and Mrs. F. D. Bidwell of Albany, a director in the State Federation of Women's Clubs.

Dr. Charles Homer Haskins, of the graduate school of arts and sciences of Harvard University, lectured before the Rochester Historical society Friday evening, February 4th, on "The Writing of French History in the United States".

At the meeting of the Oneida Historical Society, held February 14th, a resolution, offered by W. Pierrepont White, was adopted, urging the Governor and the Legislature for such amendment or interpretation of the law as shall make the road from Whitesboro to Rome, which passes the Oriskany battlefield monument, a part of the highway system of the State. The resolution cited abundant historical facts to prove that the battle of Oriskany, by stopping reinforcements for Burgoyne, and thus forcing his surrender at Saratoga, "established the certainty of American independence".

The tenth anniversary of the founding of the Kings County Historical Society, of which Charles Andrew Ditmas has been the active president throughout its existence, was celebrated with a birthday party February 15th, in Kings County Historical Hall. A musical program was enjoyed.

"The Status of the Indian Tribes" was the subject of an address by George P. Decker of Rochester, attorney and counsellor for the Six Nations of the Iroquois, delivered before the Cayuga County Historical Society on Friday evening, February 18th, in the parlors of the Woman's Union, Auburn.

Members of Tioughnioga Chapter, D. A. R., observed Washington's Birthday at their meeting at Cortland held February 19th. Mrs. Alice Turner Fox told the story of Martha Washington and Mrs. F. J. Doubleday read an account of a Washington birthday party at her home some years ago.

The Spanish War Veterans conducted a memorial meeting in the Oneida Historical Society Building Sunday afternoon, February 20th, to mark the 23d anniversary of the sinking of the Battleship Maine in Havana Harbor. Mayor James K. O'Con-

nor was the principal speaker and a musical program was enjoyed.

At the regular February meeting of the Huntington Historical Society, held Monday afternoon the 21st, the third and last paper in the series on Huntington Township and the World War was presented by Mrs. B. M. Baylis, Chairman of Suffolk County Service Records' Committee. The title of the paper was "Our Men and Women with the United States Army and Navy". The House Committee has recently had mounted on folding panels a large collection of pictures of Long Island houses, churches and mills. Among these are prints of old houses at the west end of the island, a recent gift from N. J. Van Riper, of Long Island City.

The thirty-third annual dinner of the Minisink Valley Historical Society was served at the Deerpark Club, Port Jervis, by the Machackemech Chapter of the D. A. R., on Tuesday afternoon, February 22d. The business session was held in the morning. Mr. William Heidt, of Callicoon, read a paper written by Mr. Curtis, of Callicoon, on "Rafting on the Delaware"; Hon. Guernsey T. Cross, of Callicoon, former Assemblyman for Sullivan County, spoke briefly about Route 3-A; and the Rev. John Ernest Mertz, pastor of the Reformed Church responded to a call for a few remarks and spoke of the lessons to be learned from Washington's life. The officers of the society were re-elected for the coming year.

The one hundredth anniversary of the incorporation of Livingston County was observed at a meeting in the Geneseo Normal School, February 23d, under the auspices of the Livingston County Historical Society and the Livingston County Association of Supervisors and County Officials. A wealth of splendid historical material was given by the speakers, recounting the important events of the past hundred years in Livingston and adjoining counties, and especially touching upon the earlier history of the community. W. E. Dana presided and gave the opening address; Judge H. F. Remington and Elmer Adler, of the Rochester Historical Society, presented the felicitations of Monroe County, which also celebrated its one hundredth

anniversary; Dr. Arthur Parker, State Archaeologist, spoke of the earliest settlers of the region, the Seneca Indians; and Judge Horace Fitch, of Canandaigua, represented Ontario County, from which the greater part of Livingston County was taken, and there were also speakers from Steuben, Allegany, and Genesee counties, which also contributed towns or parts of towns to this county. At the business session the following officers were elected: president, W. G. Markham, of Avon; vice-president, Gamble Wilson of Groveland; secretary and treasurer, W. F. Bucke, of Geneseo.

The annual meeting of the Johnstown Historical Society was held February 24th. Officers for the coming year were elected and the annual report of the caretaker of Sir William Johnson Hall received.

A meeting of the Ontario County Historical Society was held February 24th. At this meeting resolutions were adopted expressing regret at the death, on February 7th, of Reverend James T. Dougherty, for twenty years Rector of Saint Mary's Church of Canandaigua.

At a meeting held February 16th, under the auspices of the Tioughnioga Chapter, D. A. R., Cortland, Dr. James Sullivan, State Historian, urged that local historical records be preserved. An account of his address appeared in the Cortland Standard for February 17th.

The paper on "Doctors of Port Jervis and Vicinity" read by W. L. Cuddeback, M. D. at the meeting on February 23d, 1920, of the Minisink Valley Historical Society, has been published by that society.

At the annual meeting on Washington's Birthday of the Staten Island Historical Society, held at the residence of Cornelius G. Kolff at Harbor View, Clifton, Mr. A. W. Callison delivered a paper, "Washington and our French Allies".

*The Transactions of the Huguenot Society of South Carolina* for 1920 contain an account of the meeting held by the society on April 13th of that year at Charleston in commemoration of the birth of Admiral Gaspard de Coligny. At this meeting Mr. Ralph Le Fevre, of New Paltz, New York delivered an address on "The Huguenots of New Paltz".

At a meeting of the trustees of the New York State Historical Association it was decided to hold the 1921 meeting at Lake George.

## PUBLICATIONS, BOOKS, ARTICLES, MANUSCRIPTS

Miss W. E. Brayton has been appointed by the First Baptist Society of Rochester to gather facts for a complete history of the church in Geneva for the purpose of presenting it at the one hundredth anniversary in 1925, the church having been organized in Geneva in 1825.

Seneca Falls members of the Finger Lakes Association contemplate the placing of a number of large signs along the Free Bridge state road which would divert tourists to the shores of Cayuga Lake. An article on the part this road played in history a century ago appears in the *Rochester Democrat and Chronicle* for December 31, 1920.

An article on *Willard Mountain*, how the famous peak received its name, appeared in the *Fort Edward Advertiser* for February.

*The Hudson and Mohawk Valleys*, their fame for products and their historical significance, are treated in an article in the December 18, 1920, issue of the *Albany Evening Journal*.

In the issue of the *New Rochelle Standard* for Monday, December 27, 1920, the City Historian has an article on *How Thomas Pell came to settle at Pelham*.

In the *Fort Plain Free Press* for Wednesday, December 29, 1920, there appeared an article on the *Jelles Fonda Mansion*. The writer brings to the attention of the public the fact that this historical building is unmarked and that many residents of Fonda do not know that there is a historic spot in the village.

*Hastings in History* is the title of an article in the *Yonkers Statesman* for December 30, 1920. This article was taken from a paper by J. Otis Swift read before the Hastings Teachers' Association.

In the *Middletown Herald* for January 5, 1921, an appeal was made for some one to start an Orange County Historical Society with headquarters in Middletown.

An article by W. N. P. Dailey, entitled *The Mohawk Valley in 1520* was published in the January 5th issue of the *Fort Plain Free Press*.

Walter Wolcott, the village historian of Penn Yan, had an article in the *Rochester Democrat and Chronicle* for February 18, 1875 on Penn Yan and how it came to bear its name. The article is quoted in the *Rochester Democrat and Chronicle* for Thursday, January 13th.

Under the heading *Historical Bits* in the *Amsterdam Recorder* for Wednesday, February 21st, there was an article on *Guy Park Mansion* which was erected in 1766 by Sir William Johnson for his son-in-law, Guy Johnson.

A short article of interest appeared in the *Union Springs Advertiser* for February 3, 1921 entitled, *Notes of Interest of New York State in the Revolutionary War*.

S. A. Maxon, Secretary of the Oneida Historical Society, in a letter to the Editor of the *Oneida Dispatch*, under date of February 1st, brings to the attention of the public the fact that four authors of the history of Madison county have erred in their statements as regards the date that *The Freeholder*, published at Peterboro, first came into existence. The date should be 1807 instead of 1808.

*Orange County History in the Movies* is the title of a short article in the February 4th issue of the *Middletown Herald*.

An interesting historical account of the Society of Friends of Collins is given in the *Gowanda Enterprise* for February 17th, under the title *Early Settlers*.

Mrs. H. H. Frisbie, of Roscoe, is furnishing the *Roscoe Review* with data concerning the burial places of Sullivan County Revolutionary soldiers. She would appreciate the giving of information that will lead to the location of graves of these soldiers, or sailors. In the issue for February 24th, a short article appears about *Daniel Dodge of Rockland*, who served as a private in the Levies.

A short article on the *Old Military Tract* on the road leading toward Bloomingdale out of Saranac Lake, appeared in the *Lake Placid News* for January 28th.

H. C. Todd, the village historian of Hastings, after preparing

a record of Hastings in the World War will carry his research back to the earliest times.

In the *Penn Yan Chronicle* for December 15, 1920, Mr. Walter Wolcott has an interesting article on *How Names of Towns Originated*.

In *State Service* for November-December, 1920, there appears an address on *Dr. Vincent, Founder of Chautauqua* by Dr. John H. Finley, former State Commissioner of Education, delivered in memory of a distinguished pioneer in popular education—His aim was to open the door of the classics to the multitude.

Charles Scribner's Sons have published a book by Henry Jones Ford entitled, *Alexander Hamilton*.

A recent book, entitled, *Theodore Roosevelt and his time, shown by his own letters* (2 vols. 505, 515 Pp.), by Joseph Bucklin Bishop, has been published by Charles Scribner's Sons.

An article on *Grover Cleveland* by Gamaliel Bradford appeared in the *Atlantic Monthly* for November.

The New York State Archaeological Association, Louis Morgan Chapter, has issued a recent publication entitled, *Western New York under the French* (Pp. 40) by Frank H. Severance, Buffalo.

*The Port of New York* (history of the Port of New York) is the title of a work by Thomas E. Rush and published by Doubleday, Page. (Pp. 361).

The New York Historical Society, 170 Central Park West, has issued a publication entitled, *The equestrian statue of George III and \*\*\* statue of William Pitt erected in the city of New York, 1770*, by Alexander J. Wall. (Pp. 37-57).

The Rand School of Social Science has published *The Albany Trial* (Pp. 71), written by Charles Solomon.

An account of the unseating of the Socialist Assemblymen by the New York Legislature is given in the book, *Albany, The Crisis in Government* (Pp. 233) written by Louis Waldman and published by Boni & Liveright.

The *Saturday Evening Post*, August 28, 1920, contains an article on *Grover Cleveland's Career in Buffalo, 1855-1882*, by George F. Parker.

An illustrated article on *The Spirit of West Point*, by Colonel

Fitzhugh Lee Minnigerode, appeared in the December 19, 1920, issue of the *New York Times Book Review and Magazine*.

Among the papers in the issue for October of *Americana* is one by Charles A. Ingraham, entitled, *Personal Characteristics of Washington Irving*.

*The Czechs in America*, by Thomas Capek, is one of the recent volumes on the history of various racial groups in the United States. In addition to the general information concerning the Bohemians in the country as a whole, New York readers will find many allusions to members of this race who are or have been prominent in this State.

In the September 1920 issue of the *Grosvenor Library Bulletin* (vol. 3, No. 1), Buffalo, N. Y., there appears an illustrated article entitled, *The Library of Millard Fillmore*.

The *Ohio Archaeological and Historical Quarterly* for October 1920, vol. xxix, no. 4, contains the following articles concerning New York: *The Expedition of Celeron* by C. B. Galbreath, *Celeron's Journal* by Rev. A. A. Lambing, *Account of the Voyage on the Beautiful River made in 1749, under the direction of Monsieur De Celeron* by Father Bonnecamps; and *De Celeron's Expedition to the Ohio in 1749* by O. H. Marshall.

Charles Hartshorn Maxson, Assistant Professor of Political Science in the University of Pennsylvania has written a book entitled, *The Great Awakening in the Middle Colonies*, (1920. Pp. vii, 158), published by the University of Chicago Press. The situation with which he deals differed markedly from the homogeneity of race and ecclesiasticism found in New England. He has to study movements among elements of diverse tongue, Dutch Reformed, Irish Presbyterian, groups transplanted from New England, and Germans who were divided as Lutheran, Reformed, Mennonite, Dunkers, Moravian. His effort is to show that, apart from the rather late extension of the Edwards revival to Long Island and northern New Jersey, there were three contributory sources for the movement, all earlier than the New England revival, German, Dutch, and Scotch-Irish.

*History of Journalism in the United States*, by George Henry Payne, has been published by D. Appleton and Company. (1920 Pp. xx, 453). There are nine appendices, the most interesting



of which are William Cullen Bryant's Index Expurgatorius of words, and Horace Greeley's letter declaring his political independence of Seward and Weed.

The Yale University Press, New Haven, has published *The Masters of Capital: a Chronicle of Wall Street*, by John Moody (Chronicles of America Series, vol. XLII, 1919. Pp. ix, 234.)

Volume II of *The Report of the American Historical Association for 1918* is entirely occupied by the Autobiography of Martin Van Buren, edited by John C. Fitzpatrick, Assistant Chief of the Manuscript Division of the Library of Congress. In spite of a style which lacks lightness and ease, Van Buren's narrative of his political career, is, as Mr. Fitzpatrick observes in his Prefatory Note, "too valuable to be ignored safely by the conscientious investigator".

*The Report of the Librarian of Congress* for the year ending June 30, 1920, has appeared. Among accessions pertaining to New York State history should be noted a collection of material relating to John Brown, consisting of 55 volumes, 6 pamphlets, 122 prints and 11 numbers, given by Dr. Thomas Featherstonhaugh; and considerable manuscript material. This includes letters from George Croghan, William Duer, Le Ray de Chaumont, Robert R. Livingston, Elias Boudinot, Robert Fulton, James Geddes, Gouverneur Morris, T. DeWitt Talmage, Grover Cleveland, Gerrit Smith, John Jay, John A. Dix, Millard Fillmore, Joseph Henry, Samuel F. B. Morse, John C. Spencer, Washington Irving, Martin Van Buren, William L. Marcy, William H. Seward, Martin I. Townsend, J. Watson Webb, and Augustus Saint Gaudens; an order of John Morin Scott and others in favor of William Duer for £600, 1777; diaries kept by Benjamin Lincoln of a journey from Quaker Hill, N. Y., to Charleston, S. C., to take command at the latter place, October 31 to December 1, 1778, and of the siege of Savannah, Ga., September 3 to October 4, 1779. There is a large collection of broadsides running from 1763 to 1920.

*The Quarterly Bulletin* of the New York Historical Society, January number, contains an illustrated article on children's toys found in Revolutionary camps in what is now known as Greater New York, a representation of the Lafayette punch bowl, made for the dinner given at Castle Garden on August 16, 1824, com-

memorating the landing of the Marquis in New York City in that year, and a list of Revolutionary officers in the New York State line, whose descendants would be eligible for membership in the Society of the Cincinnati, and from whom no descendant has claimed the right. This list is also given in the February issue of the *Daughters of the American Revolution Magazine*.

A valuable feature of *The Grosvenor Library Bulletin*, December, 1920, is the *Fillmore Correspondence*, selections from the collection of Mr. A. Conger Goodyear, embracing a number of letters exchanged by Millard Fillmore in 1855 with Lord Derby, Edward Everett and Robert C. Winthrop, and of somewhat earlier dates other letters, one of which relates to the Kossuth-Hülse-mann episode. An accompanying article, from the same collection, is "The Prince of Wales and Buffalo, 1860", comprising extracts from the *Buffalo Express* of that period and a letter from the Duke of Newcastle. Peter A. Porter contributes a paper, *Niagara's Earliest Indian Legend of the White Man*, in which he argues that the explorer, La Salle was the first white man to behold Niagara Falls, and that the year of this event was 1669.

In *State Service* for January is a sketch, written by Dr. James Sullivan, State Historian, of the career of the late *Charles M. Dow*, of Jamestown, N. Y., and his contributions to the conservation of natural scenery. The February-March number contains Charles R. Skinner's address, *Memories of Schools of Yesterday*, delivered at the Regents Convocation, on October 7th, 1920; and a paper on *David B. Hill* as statesman and politician, by George S. Bixby, who is writing a biography of Hill.

In *The Annals of Iowa*, January number, are recorded the deaths of several prominent men who were born in New York State. A. O. Garlock, born in Otsego county, December 4, 1842, died at Escondido, California, April 5, 1913, served in the Illinois infantry in the Civil War, receiving a commission as lieutenant, and removed to Pocohontas county, Iowa in 1869. He held the offices of county auditor and state senator. Albin C. Blackmore, born in Allegany, August 19, 1843, died at Northwood, Iowa, August 29, 1915. After three years' service in the Civil War in the 64th New York infantry, he removed to Wisconsin and later to Worth county, Iowa. Besides filling county offices, he was a

representative in three general assemblies. Norman Haskins, born in this state in 1825, died March 2, 1914, at Denver, Colorado, had accumulated property in Iowa coal mines and real estate and was a liberal patron of Drake University, at Des Moines. The number for October, 1920, has some interesting recollections of the Republican convention of 1860, obtained in an interview with Charles C. Nourse, of Des Moines in 1907. Nourse was an Iowa delegate. The prominent feature of the matter which he furnished is a study of the political strength and weakness of William H. Seward.

Three letters that should be noted here are in *The Proceedings* of the Massachusetts Historical Society for 1919-20. In one, written by Rev. Gilbert Tennent from New York, April 25, 1741, to George Whitefield, the revivalist, the success of evangelistic labors on Long Island and other parts of the colony is mentioned. It was printed in the *Glasgow-Weekly-History 1743 Relating to the Late Progress of the Gospel at Home and Abroad: Being a Collection of Letters, partly reprinted from the London-Weekly History, and partly printed first here at Glasgow. For the Year 1742*, a volume which has recently been purchased by the Massachusetts Society. Another letter is from General Sir Jeffery Amherst to Colonel Bradstreet, written at Crown Point November 2, 1759, on preparations to quit the camp at that post. The third, by President Eliphalet Nott to Congressman Chesselden Ellis, written from Union College February 4, 1844, deals with the political conditions of that year.

A paper entitled *Blazing the Way to Final Victory, 1781*, by Dr. Austin Scott, has the leading place in *The Proceedings of the New Jersey Historical Society* for January. An order issued August 29 of that year by Washington to Simeon DeWitt for surveying the road from New Brunswick to the Head of Elk, preparatory to the Virginia campaign, supplies the suggestion for the article.

*The Bulletin of the New York Public Library* for December, 1920, and January, 1921, continues the history of the library by Harry Miller Lydenberg. A note in the February issue stated that the next instalment would probably be printed in the April issue. The January number contains a description, by Victor Hugo Paltsits, of "The Pilgrim Tercentenary Exhibition in the New York Public Library."

*The Missouri Historical Review* for January is a centennial number. A separate feature of the issue is a letter on the U. S. Grant log cabin, at Nursery, Missouri, written by F. A. Weber of that place. The cabin was moved about thirty years ago, for the purpose of public exhibition, from the Grant farm, on which it was built, but now stands on near-by property. The Grant farm which was given to Mrs. Julia Dent Grant by her father, Colonel Dent, and was worked by General Grant for several years, is owned by a company with which Mr. Weber is connected.

*The Journal of History*, a publication of the Reorganized Church of Jesus Christ of Latter Day Saints at Lamoni, Iowa, prints in the October number, 1920, seven editorials, official statements, of Joseph Smith, compiled by Heman Hale Smith. The subjects are *Censorship of Church Press*, *Sensational Preaching*, *Department in the House of Worship*, *Responsibility*, *Books of Reference*, *When will Christ Come?* *Wisdom as a Gift*. The editorials appeared first in the *Saints Herald*.

*The Bronxville Review* of December 11, 1920, devotes considerable space to an observance of the seventieth anniversary of the organization of the Reformed Church of that village. A commemorative sermon was preached on Sunday, November 21st, by the pastor, Rev. Deane Edwards. On the preceding Wednesday, a "birthday party" was held, a feature of which was the exhibiting of objects of interest associated with the history of the society, beginning with the first minute book of the elders. The same newspaper, in its issues of December 25 and January 1, 1921, gives a report of the observance of the fiftieth anniversary of the Bronxville school on December 20th. The house warming of the junior high school gave an opportunity for the exercises. The first principal, Mrs. Sanford, was present and held a reception; and an address covering the history of the school was delivered by Mr. Charles Ruston, Sr., the village historian.

*The Pioneers of Mendon* is the title of a series of articles compiled by Mrs. Anah B. Yates and printed in *The Honeoye Falls Times*. The first of the series appeared on September 30th, 1920, and the series is continued in 1921.

In the January number of the quarterly, *The New York Gen-*

*eological and Biographical Record*, is an article on *The Deering or Dering Family of Boston, Massachusetts, and Shelter Island, New York*, contributed by Arthur Wentworth Hamilton Eaton. Theresa Hall Bristol continues from a previous number *Westchester County, N. Y. Miscellanea*. Clarence Ettienne Leonard contributes some notes on *The Waring Surname, a Restoration*, a name borne by an early settler on Long Island; and William Solyman Coons continues *The Tibbitts or Tibbetts Family. Descendants of George Tippet of Yonkers, N. Y.* The April number contains *Josiah Collins Pumpelly*, with frontispiece portrait, contributed by Hopper Striker Mott; *Thomas C. Butler and his Descendants*, by Henry Snyder Kissam, Butler being a resident of New York City as early as 1792; a sketch with portrait of Charles King Morrison, by John R. Totten; *Tompkins County Gravestone Inscriptions*, with a key map giving the location of the graveyards in the southern towns, by Mrs. Dora Pope Worden; a sketch, with portrait, of Henry Benedict Davenport, by Henry Snyder Kissam; *Early New York Church Records*, a report and digest of the records transcribed by the New York Genealogical and Biographical Society, 1918 to 1920, by Royden Woodward Vosburgh; and a continuation of *Westchester County, N. Y. Miscellanea*, by Theresa Hall Bristol. A necrology of members for 1920 is furnished by Mr. Kissam.

#### MUSEUMS, HISTORIC MONUMENTS AND REMAINS

The historic White House in Middleburg, a once famous hostelry, has been sold and will be razed at once.

Mrs. John D. Parsons, Jr., has given an interesting collection of autograph letters to the Albany Institute and Historical and Art Society. A letter from George Washington to the Mayor of Albany, written June 27, 1782, is probably of the greatest interest. The collection also includes a letter by Washington Irving written at Sunnyside Cottage and one from Thomas Jefferson written from his Monticello mansion. Among modern epistles are missives from Commodore Vanderbilt, Mary Lincoln and Presidents McKinley and Roosevelt.

At Onondaga Valley, not far from the limits of Syracuse, there is an unsightly ruin of the old State Arsenal. A movement, headed by Miss Lillie Belle Dimond, has been started to restore this ancient landmark, which has great historic value.

An illustrated article on this subject appeared in the issue of December 29, 1920 of the Syracuse Journal.

The Minisink Valley Historical Society has recently received the following gifts: From Benjamin C. Swartwout,—Reports of the Committee of Safety concerning investigations of complaints made against Tories and also a letter from Gov. George Clinton, 1771. The committee for Peenpack or Mamakating was composed of Philip Swartwout, Benjamin Cuddeback, Gerardus Van Inwegen, Benjamin Depuy and Thomas Kyte. From Silas Cuddeback,—Business papers, records of surveys, receipts and various documents of Abraham Cuddeback dating from 1786 to 1850, also papers of Colonel William A. Cuddeback. From Albert L. Stage,—U. S. flag with 33 stars made in April 1861, by patriotic ladies of Barryville and placed on a pole on the public school in that village by Albert Stage, principal, shortly after the firing on Fort Sumter at Charleston, S. C. The flag is in an excellent state of preservation and is probably one of the oldest public school flags in this section of the State.

At a meeting of the Saturday Club of Wyoming, Mrs. Elsie Falkner gave the society 27 Civil War buttons, taken from a coat that had been through Libby prison. They are to be mounted and sold as hat pins.

The original Reformed Church of Stone Arabia (a log structure) was erected in 1733. The present stone church was erected in 1788 by Philip Schuyler, a sixth son of the first recorded pastor of the church. An interesting article on this church appeared in the *Fort Plain Standard* for December 23, 1920.

The Wyoming Historical Society has recently received the following gifts: An old sampler, bearing the marking "Deborah Ewell, aged 13 years and born in the year 1796", a beautiful ivory corset board, from Miss Bessie Miller; and two beautifully preserved Ambrotypes from Mrs. May Childs of Rochester, one of Wyoming and the other of her grandfather, Joseph Newell, a tavern keeper for many years.

The following gifts have recently been received by the Huntington Historical Society:—A medal and five buttons repre-

senting as many branches of war activities from Mrs. Joseph Hewlett Willets; a mahogany framed copy of the Declaration of Independence surrounded by the arms of the 13 original States and portrait of Washington from Mrs. John F. Drake of Brooklyn; a sausage gun and an early type of crank churn from H. H. Eiseman; a tissue American flag 3 by 12 feet released with parachute from aerial bomb at opening of Fine Arts Museum, Heckscher Park in July 1920, from L. W. Taft; a pewter spoon, a silver fish-shaped knitting sheath and a deed of 1722 from Mrs. M. C. S. Symonds. Miss Carrie E. Brown has given several numbers of the *N. Y. Times Current History Magazine*, which is recognized as of unusual value for the period covering the World War. The society is desirous of getting more of the issues of this magazine.

There is a movement in Madison County to have the historic Nichols Pond site, in the town of Fenner, as a State Park.

Members of the King Manor Association, as well as the Rufus King Chapter of the Daughters of the American Revolution, at a meeting of the Building and Ground Committee of the association, on February 7th, voiced vigorous protest against the proposal of the Queensboro Library Association to take over the historic King Mansion on Fulton Street, Jamaica, for library purposes. The chairman of the committee announced later in the evening that the King Manor would be used for historical purposes only. The building, on an eleven-acre plot, is a model for architecture of the Revolutionary and Colonial period.

The Shepard Homestead at Dansville has been given by the members of the Shepard family to the Board of Trustees of the Dansville Public Library to be used as a library in perpetuity. The house was completed in 1824 by Joshua Shepard, a contemporary of Colonel Nathaniel Rochester.

Senator F. W. Kavanaugh of Waterford and Assemblyman Stewart MacFarland of Glens Falls, at the request of the New York State Historical Association, are trying to interest the State in the purchase of the Freeman farm in Saratoga County, which is part of the battlefield of Saratoga.

One hundred and twelve years ago two Pittsford churches were organized, the First Baptist and the First Presbyterian. Both churches celebrated with a mid-day dinner on January 5, 1921.

On December 16, 1920, the Third Presbyterian Church of Troy celebrated its ninetieth anniversary. A review of the church's history, especially in regard to its origin, was given by the pastor, Rev. Morgan S. Post, and Rev. Paul R. Hickok, pastor of the Second Presbyterian Church, delivered the anniversary sermon.

The Baptist Church at Manlius was organized in 1791, the first meeting being held in what was known as the East School House, near Edward Falls. Legal organization was effected in 1822 and in 1827 or 1828 the church was built. A short illustrated article appeared about this church in the *Syracuse Herald* for January 30th.

Miss Sarah K. Hollis, the City Historian of Troy, has announced that the city has a collection of city directories from 1829 to 1920 complete, with the exception of eleven issues.

A leaden box, which had been placed in the corner stone thirty-two years ago, was unearthed in the ruins of the Lyons' school house, which was recently destroyed by fire. The box contained copies of Lyons' newspapers of that time, and various other papers. The most interesting thing was a ten cent piece dated 1838, which was found on the stone under the lead box. This ten cent piece had been found under the first brick laid on the southwest corner of the first school building, erected in 1847.

Mrs. John Thacher has recently made a gift to the State Museum of the original title deed for the land on which Albany stands to-day. This will be placed on exhibit. The original wording is in Dutch and has been translated. In addition to its great historical worth, the aged parchment is rendered more valuable as it bears one of the few known signatures in existence of Peter Minuit. It also bears the signatures of D. Pieter Byvelt, Jan Lampe, Reyner Harmensen and Jan Jansz Meyns.

Besides the thousand and more paintings and portraits in



the possession of the New York Society of the Daughters of Columbia County Historical Society, is the Peter Marie collection of miniatures; a section of the trunk of Peter Stuyvesant's pear tree; the table used by the Federal Congress in 1789; the iron railing from the balcony of Federal Hall; the family coach of James Beekman; the punch bowl made in England for the welcoming dinner to Lafayette given at Castle Garden in 1824; and many other interesting relics.

The curator of the Montgomery County Historical Society reported a number of manuscripts and papers which have come into its possession containing a large amount of Revolutionary and pre-Revolutionary matter. Among these there came from the Abbott collection the toll book of Jephtha R. Simms of Fultonville, who was toll keeper at that time. Mr. Wyman has given to the society a photograph of a very rare painting made of Sir William Johnson about 1750. Dr. Abbott, formerly of Fonda, has presented to the society a complete set of war posters of England, France and Italy. From Edward P. White of Buffalo has come an interesting bowie knife. From James Goodrich Putnam, a great-great-grandson of Judge Lansing, a permanent loan of a surveyor's chain, used by Judge James Lansing. This chain was used in Montgomery County when Fulton and Hamilton Counties were taken off. A replica of a letter written by Colonel John Brown has been lent to the society. One of the most interesting relics belonging to the society is the great wax seal of New York State under Governor Clinton. This was presented by Judge Henry V. Borst.

The County Clerk of Ontario County has added a unique and valuable map to the records of the County Clerk's office. It is one of the famous David Burr maps showing Ontario and part of Yates County, as they were constituted in 1829. The plan is in colors, is 17x22 inches in size, and bears the rivers, old roads and stage roads of date of 1829. This map is an original lithograph.

The farm of R. W. Snyder, in the town of Hopewell, Ontario County, has recently been the scene of discoveries particularly interesting to students of early history and archaeology. The

location has long been known to such students as that of the old Indian village of "Onnaghee", which became the principal village of the Seneca nation following the destruction by Denonville, in 1687, of the nation's capital, Ganagaro, on Boughton Hill in what is now the town of Victor. Several years ago a number of graves were located in the hickory grove lying north of the village site. These when opened yielded a wealth of interesting relics. A few weeks ago through the unwitting aid of a woodchuck, other and yet more interesting remains were discovered. Mr. Snyder reports that he and his friends have opened some thirty graves in this field and believes there are others as yet untouched. The relics include skillfully carved combs and pipes, a quantity of copper arrow heads, Jesuit rings and crosses, and numerous shell and catlinite ornaments, the material for the making of which must have been obtained by the Senecas in barter with red skins living as far away as the Atlantic coast or the valley of the Missouri. An article appeared on this "Onnaghee village" in the January 5, 1920, issue of the *Ontario County Times*.

*The Twenty-fifth Annual Report of the American Scenic and Historic Preservation Society*, 1920, presents a list of the forty parks and buildings owned by the State, which can be described as scenic, scientific and historic monuments. These reservations are mentioned in the order of their creation; and the list is a continuation of the one published in the report of 1916.

Under the title, *Early American Domestic Architecture*, the February number of *The Architectural Forum* gives exterior and interior pictures of the Sir William Johnson house at Fort Johnson, with measured drawings by W. D. Foster and Lewis E. Welsh.

*The Bronxville Review* for January 1, 1921, contains a description of the sixteen-mile driveway in process of construction through the historic Bronx river valley, from Bronx Park on the south to the Kensico Reservoir on the north. A part of this work of restoration is the removal of the hideous billboards along the way.

## WORLD WAR MEMORIALS AND COLLECTIONS

That up-state members of the 107th Infantry, one of the units of the 27th Division, played a valorous and conspicuous part in all engagements of that outfit in the World War, is emphatically told in words and pictures in the history of that regiment which has just been published under the direction of the Regimental Historian appointed by the commanding officer in France. Detailed histories of the various companies, written by representatives of the companies, and individual records of all of the men who remained with the regiment throughout its period of activity appear in the pages of this book.

The *Flushing Daily Times* printed a statement in its issue of February 19, 1920, that any one who desired a copy of the Roll of Honor of Flushing residents who served in the World War could obtain one by addressing a request to the above named newspaper.

The Victory Hall Association of New York City plans to erect a building practically duplicating the Parthenon, but five times as large, in Pershing Square just opposite the Grand Central Station. It is to be a utilitarian memorial, however, and not a mere monument in stone. Mainly, it will be a memorial hall, a popular auditorium, an exhibition palace, a musical center, the permanent headquarters of the American Legion, and the central meeting place in the future of the public schools athletic league. The drive for subscriptions to build this Victory Hall is to come on April 6th, the anniversary of the day when the United States declared war, and its purpose is that New York will not forget those who fought and died in the World War.

A handsome bronze tablet in honor of the students, and former students and teachers of the Troy High School, who served in the World War, was formally dedicated at appropriate exercises in the school auditorium Thursday morning, January 27th.

The K. of C. hut, which was in Longacre Square, New York City, was shipped to Katonah, New York, where it will serve

as a memorial schoolhouse, dedicated to James Kelly of that village, who was killed in the Argonne during the World War. During the two years existence of the hut, it has been estimated about one million service men crossed its threshold. Sixty-five thousand men have been placed in employment by the K. of C. Bureau operated in the hut during the last ten months.

Recent publications concerning various divisions or units of the army in the World War in which New York men participated are of interest;

*The History of the 105th Regiment of Engineers.* Willard P. Sullivan and others, compilers. N. Y.: Doran. Pp. 466.

*302nd Field Artillery, United States Army.* 302nd Field Artillery Association. Cambridge, Mass.: J. J. Lane, 144 Lexington Ave. Pp. 172.

*The Three Hundred and First Engineers.* U. S. Engineers, 301st Engineers. Boston: Houghton-Mifflin Co. Pp. 310.

*The Three Hundred and First Engineers; A History.* By Captain E. J. Weaver. Boston: Houghton-Mifflin.

*Our Second Battalion* (History of Second Battalion, 111th Inf., 28th Div., A. E. F.). By George W. Cooper. Pittsburgh, Pa.: Second Battalion Book Co., 616 Taylor Ave. Pp. 299.

*The Knights of Columbus in Peace and War.* By Maurice F. Egan and J. J. B. Kennedy. New Haven, Conn.; Knights of Columbus. Pp. 823.

*The American Engineers in France.* By William B. Parsons. N. Y.: Appleton. Pp. 429.

*A History of Battery F, 323d Field Artillery.* By M. H. Riggs and R. H. Platt. Cleveland, Ohio: J. B. Dempsey. Pp. 154.

*With the 351st in France; A Diary.* William O. Ross and D. L. Slaughter, compilers. Baltimore: The Afro-American Co. Pp. 52.

*The History of the A. E. F.* By Shipley Thomas. N. Y.: Doran. Pp. 540.

*History of the 322nd Field Artillery.* 322nd U. S. Artillery. New Haven: Yale Univ. Press. Pp. 511.

## NOTICE

An apology is due to the members for the late appearance of this April number. Just as the copy was sent to press difficulties arose in the printing trades which have only recently been settled. The accumulations of back work in all printing offices had to be taken up in their order and we, like the rest, had to wait our turn. We now hope to have the July and October numbers out before the close of the year, thus completing the proceedings of the Bear Mountain Meeting.

EDITOR

## STATEMENT

Statement of Ownership, Management, Circulation, etc., required by the Act of Congress of August 24, 1912, of the Quarterly Journal of the New York State Historical Association, published quarterly at Albany, N. Y., for April 1, 1921, State of New York, County of Albany. Before me, a Notary Public, in and for the State and County aforesaid, personally appeared James Sullivan, who, having been duly sworn according to law, deposes and says that he is the Editor of the Quarterly Journal of the New York State Historical Association, and that the following is, to the best of his knowledge and belief, a true statement of the ownership, management, etc., of the aforesaid publication for the date shown in the above caption, required by the Act of August 24, 1912 Publisher, New York State Historical Association. Editor and Managing Editor, James Sullivan, Albany, New York. Business Manager, none.

2. That the owners are: The New York State Historical Association and issues no stock; officers are George A. Blauvelt, Monsey, President; Gilbert D. B. Hasbrouck, Kingston, First Vice-President; Frank H. Severance, Buffalo, Second Vice-President; James Sullivan, Albany, Corresponding Secretary, and Frederick B. Richards, Glens Falls, Recording Secretary and Treasurer.

3. That the known bondholders, mortgagees and other security holders owning or holding 1 per cent., or more of total amount of bonds, mortgages, or other securities are: None. Signed, James Sullivan, Editor. Sworn to and subscribed before me this 29th day of March, 1921. (Seal.) Herbert J. Hamilton, Notary Public. (My commission expires March, 1922.)

# The Quarterly Journal

of the

New York State Historical  
Association



Volume II

July 1921

Number 3

Entered as second class mail matter October 22, 1919, at the Post Office at Albany, New York  
under the Act of August 24, 1912.

# NEW YORK STATE HISTORICAL ASSOCIATION

## Quarterly Journal

Editorial Committee

JAMES SULLIVAN, Managing Editor

DIXON R. FOX

FREDERICK B. RICHARDS

---

---

## CONTENTS

REVOLUTIONARY CAMPS OF THE HUDSON HIGHLANDS	
- - - - -	W. S. Thomas 141
THE CALVINIST MIND IN AMERICA	- - Dixon R. Fox 156
THE TOWN OF DOVER ON STATEN ISLAND	George W. Tuttle 164
THE HUGUENOTS - THE FIRST SETTLERS IN THE PROVINCE OF NEW YORK	- - - - - Ralph Le Fevre 177
OBITUARIES	- - - - - By George A. Ingalls 186
REVIEWS OF BOOKS	- - - - - 195
Donaldson, <i>A History of the Adirondacks</i> ; Cunningham, <i>Three Years with the Adirondack Regiment</i> ; Sullivan, <i>With the Yanks in France</i> ; Williams, <i>American Catholics in the War</i> .	
NOTES AND QUERIES	- - - - - 199

---

---

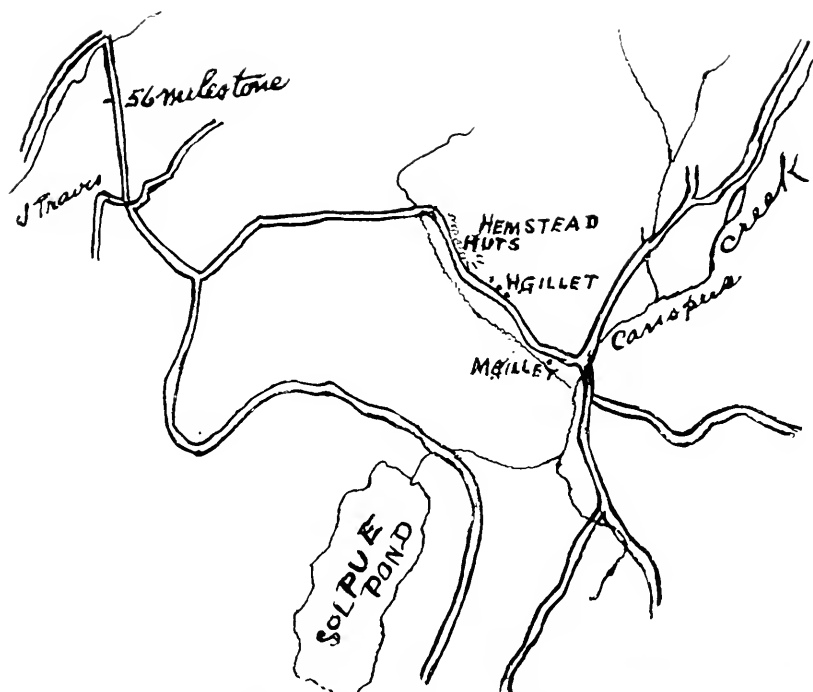
Subscription Price \$1.50

Single Numbers 40 cents

Address all contributions and communications to  
New York State Historical Association, Albany.







Tracing of the O'Connor Map (1854)



Excavations at Hempstead Huts

---

# The Quarterly Journal

of the New York State Historical Association

---

## REVOLUTIONARY CAMPS OF THE HUDSON HIGHLANDS<sup>1</sup>

This highland region is enchanted ground. Its hills and valleys woods and fields, are haunted by the spirits of nature and of beauty and by the memories of historic happenings. In Revolutionary times the summits had their sentinels, the river its boatmen manning guard boats, ferries, officers' barges, supply boats and war vessels. Busy camps, military towns, with their rows on rows of log huts, lay in sheltered valleys or on sloping hillsides. Squads, companies or brigades of troops drilled in the open spaces. Detachments marched from camp to work upon some redoubt or back to their sentried quarters for the night's rest. Horsemen travelled the roads bearing dispatches; supply wagons, drawn usually by oxen, lumbered back and forth, while soldiers afoot or mounted officers passed by upon their various errands.

The military post of the Hudson Highlands extended north and south from Newburgh to Stony Point on the west side, and from Fishkill to Verplanck's Point on the east side of the river. East and west, the mountain wilds from the Connecticut border to the Ramapo River were included in the command.

The importance of defending at all hazards the passage of the river was only partly realized during the first years of the war. The four Highland forts first to be erected were placed along the river banks while the commanding hills were left unguarded. American confidence in the adequacy of Forts Clinton and Montgomery, Independence and Constitution, was rudely dispelled in

---

<sup>1</sup>An address delivered at the Bear Mountain meeting of the New York State Historical Association, October 7, 1920.

the autumn of 1777 when Sir Henry Clinton's forces sailed up the river, captured and destroyed them as well as the supply depot at Continental Village, and penetrated far enough up river to burn the city of Kingston. The defence of the Hudson Highlands, the key to military supremacy in the Colonies, was then begun in earnest by Washington's army. Men and munitions were poured into the region and a large system of fortifications was erected, centering in the citadel at West Point. Never again did an enemy force pass through the gate.

The commander-in-chief when in the vicinity, and the general officers, occupied the few available dwelling houses in the neighborhood as their headquarters from time to time. There were the red Moore house close above West Point, the Beverly Robinson mansion, and Mandeville's across the river, Budd's house on the New York and Albany Post Road, two and a half miles back from what is now the village of Cold Spring, and Thomas Davenport's on the site of the present deRham place east of Constitution Island. Officers of less rank were quartered in "marquees" or tents, or in log huts larger and less crowded than those of the enlisted men, but constructed and placed in the same general manner.

Dr. James Thacher, an army surgeon from Massachusetts, describes in his *Military Journal*, the building of these log camps, which were said at that period to be peculiar to this continent. He writes at Middlebrook, N. J., in February, 1780:

Our soldiers have been employed six or eight weeks in constructing log huts, which at length are completed, and both officers and soldiers are now under comfortable covering for the remainder of the winter. Log houses are constructed with the trunks of trees, cut into various lengths according to the size intended, and are firmly connected by notches cut at their extremities in the manner of dovetailing. The vacancies between the logs are filled in with plastering consisting of mud and clay. The roof is formed of similar pieces of timber, and covered with hewn slabs. The chimney situated at one end of the house is made of similar but smaller timber, and both the inner and the outer side are covered with clay plaster, to defend the wood against the fire. The door and windows are formed by sawing away a part of the logs of a proper size, and move on wooden hinges. In this manner have our soldiers, without nails, and almost without tools, except the axe and saw, provided for their officers and for themselves comfortable and convenient quarters, with little or no expense to the public. The

huts are arranged in strait lines forming a regular uniform compact village. The officers' huts are situated in front of the line, according to their rank, the kitchens in the rear, and the whole is similar in form to a tent encampment. The ground for a considerable distance in front of the soldiers' line of huts is cleared of wood, stumps and rubbish, and is every morning swept clean for the purpose of a parade ground and roll call for the respective regiments. The officers' huts are in general divided into two apartments and are occupied by three or four officers, who compose one mess. Those for the soldiers have but one room, and contain ten or twelve men, with their cabins placed one above another against the walls, and filled with straw, and one blanket for each man.

The huts of the Hudson Highlands were provided with chimneys built of the stones so abundant in the region. Boards were used when available and hand-forged nails are not infrequently found today, buried about hut sites here.

Particular features of the terrain which determined the selection of hutting grounds were, first, nearness to water, second, the presence of wood for fuel, and third, shelter from the cold winter winds. A wooded valley through which a brook ran, or upon the eastern slope of a hill, was the customary location of a camp.

The region near the Hudson was even more thickly populated than it is today, in spite of all the modern farms, villas and villages. The hills, now wooded, were mostly bare and rocky in Revolutionary days. The axe took toll from the forest growth until hills and valleys were stripped for miles about in order to provide lumber and fuel or to clear the approach against enemy attack. As the war went on, wood became more and more scarce, and camps were sometimes shifted in quest of sites where fuel would be close at hand.

The log-built towns of the Revolutionary soldiers, perhaps more than the fortifications, have their historic and human associations. In and about these dwelling places, Continentals and militia worked and drilled. Here they chatted, ate and drank and suffered from cold and hunger or homesickness through the hard winters in what they called sometimes, "the hated Highlands", far from home and from the accustomed haunts of the citizenry.

The rocky and mountainous character of the land in much of the Highland region has hindered cultivation of the soil but, fortunately for the shrine seeker, has been an important factor in the preservation of Revolutionary sites. Tumbledown remains of

forts are visible today, here and there among the hills, but the sites of the military camps of the region are well-nigh lost. Hidden away among some three hundred square miles of territory hereabouts are the ancient sites of many camps. They may be stumbled upon by the antiquarian who recognizes in scattered stoneheaps the remains of what were once hut chimneys, but in order to determine precise locations by their Revolutionary names, field exploration is not enough. It must be supplemented by research among source documents.

Members of the Field Exploration Committee of the New York Historical Society have been interested in searching out these long-lost sites. Evidence found in volumes of forgotten lore has been supplemented by rides and tramps and by the use of spade and sieve in the hope that some of these historic places may once more be known of men.

The source of information concerning the Highland camps has been confined for the most part to Revolutionary documents and maps, for historians have passed them by unnoticed, and oldest inhabitants of the vicinity today appear to know or care but little about what happened on the morning of our national day. Soldiers' diaries, reports of British spies, army orderly books and occasional letters written on the spot to the folks at home, have all added their hints as to the location, character and occupants of the campsites. Dusty manuscripts, brooks long dry, roads now obsolete, have been searched by those interested and have furnished data. But it is one thing to locate a campsite upon the map and quite another to go and dig where pay dirt will leave behind in the shaken sieve, relics proving military occupation.

Mr. W. L. Calver of New York City, Chairman of the Field Exploration Committee, has for thirty years been foremost in developing the science and art of recovering buried objects from the military campsites of the American Revolution. He, and the group associated with him, have unearthed thousands which tell historic stories. For instance, they have found, in and about New York City, among other objects, metallic buttons of scores of the British regiments sent to this country to subdue the Colonies. In the Hudson Highlands, they have unearthed relics which have identified both the locations of campsites and the corps which occupied them. Gun flints, leaden musket balls, rusty bayonets

and other articles of the ancient soldiers' equipment tell part of the story, but the identification of regiments depends upon the custom existing in the armies of the Revolutionary period of furnishing military uniforms with metallic buttons bearing regimental numbers, names or insignia. Enlisted men wore pewter and commissioned officers silver or bronze buttons. At the New York Historical Society may be seen an exhibit of relics from the Highland and other Revolutionary campsites.

These excavations often bring to mind the contrast between the proud equipment of His Britannic Majesty's legions and the humbler and scantier paraphernalia of the Colonial troops. In the matter of buttons alone, a score can be dug up where the redcoats were encamped for each one found about American Army sites. These telltale buttons are still to be found in a fair state of preservation in spite of their having lain for a hundred and forty years underground. They are occasionally found in digging building foundations about West Point and it is but a few months ago that an eighteenth century camp kettle fragment was found partly buried, near the sunset gun.

At West Point the Continental troops were garrisoned in large barracks on the plain, some of them within the great enclosure of Fort Arnold, renamed Clinton, after the treachery. Other brigades were huddled on the hills near Redoubt No. 3, and were detailed to man the neighboring forts in case of alarm. Dr. Thacher, in his diary, alludes to the site:

Our brigade (the 1st Massachusetts) took possession of our huts for the winter (of 1780-81), in the woods about two miles in the rear of the works at West Point. Our situation is singularly romantic, on a highly elevated spot, surrounded by mountains and craggy rocks of a prodigious size, lofty broken cliffs, and the banks of the beautifully meandering Hudson, affording a view of the country for many miles in all directions.

\* \* \* The huts are warm and comfortable, wood in abundance at our doors, and a very tolerable supply of provisions.

The huts he mentions were built in the latter part of the year 1780 by the New York Continental troops and were known as the York Huts, although never occupied by the troops of this state.

The fallen stone foundations of Redoubt No. 3 are clearly visible on a hilltop one mile west by south in an air line from Fort Putnam. The precise location of the York Huts has not yet been

identified, though buttons of the 1st, 2nd, 3rd, 4th, 5th, 6th, and 9th Massachusetts Regiments have been found within the limits of the old fort. The course of an ancient military road may be traced as it winds around and down the hill to the north and west and terminates by the side of a scarcely recognizable dam which, according to tradition, impounded the outflow of a spring in order to provide a watering place for the horses of the army. Local tradition has it also that the level sheltered vale, once known as Eagle Valley, situated to the south and west of the hill on the north end of which stood Redoubt No. 3, was the campsite of troops during the Revolution.

Ancient documents make it clear that there were camps in Smith's Clove through which flows the Ramapo River. Here is an interesting field for exploration.

Constitution Island, about three quarters of a mile in diameter, creates a sharp bend in the Hudson at its narrowest point for many miles. Rough, rocky and hilly itself, it is surrounded by still higher hills, some of them precipitous. Among the island's wooded ledges are the remains of at least four forts and numerous scattered hutsites. These are guarded against spoliation by the fact that the island is included in the U. S. Government reservation of West Point. The classic buildings across the river are so near that the explorer of these wooded recesses hears, on quiet days, the notes of the bugle sounding orders at the cadets' drill.

Remains of the stonework of forts Nos. 5, 6, and 7, as shown on the Villefranche map of 1780 to be standing on the island's eminences, are fairly well preserved. These were erected after the British raid of October 1777, but on that occasion, so effectively were Fort Constitution and the original barracks demolished, that it is now difficult to find track or trace of them, except that, if tradition is true, a portion of the old garrison buildings is included in the southwest section of the Warner house, the only dwelling now standing on the island.

The long parapet of the original Fort Constitution may be traced, parallel to the water's edge, a short distance west of the house, and facing the southern reach of the river. Behind this parapet are several square rods of bushy ground where the spade discloses multitudes of small fragments of brick and mortar, apparently scattered by the destructive explosions of



October 9th, 1777. The immediate vicinity has also yielded broken pottery of the eighteenth century type and Revolutionary buttons. From hutsites on the island have been dug similar relics, especially in the neighborhood of Fort No. 7, or the Magazine, as it is also called. This rather massive stone foundation stands on a high ledge at the western extremity of the island.

At the northern edge of the Highlands and four miles east of the river, the important military center of Fishkill comprised, during the Revolution, a hospital, located in the Episcopal church, a prison in the Dutch Reformed church, quartermaster's stores, magazines, blacksmith's shops, a printing office, stables and extensive barracks, interestingly described in the published *Travels of the British prisoner Anburey* and by our noble ally, the Marquis de Chastellux. Both of the churches are still standing. The main encampment was a mile and a quarter south of the present village and lay along the Post Road, where it enters the mountains from the north. The Wharton House, which served as officers' quarters, still exists as a notable relic of the Revolution. The site of the main barracks, west of the Post Road, along a brook, which flows from the east and passes a short distance south of the Wharton House, is now under farm cultivation which has destroyed the traces of its military occupation, but de Chastellux thus describes his visit to the place:

The Quartermaster conducted me to see the barracks, the magazines and workhouses of the different workmen employed in the service of the Army. These barracks are wooden houses, well built and well covered, having garrets and even cellars. \* \* \* They call these huts, and are very expert in constructing one and the other. They consist of little walls made of stones heaped up, the intervals of which are filled with earth kneaded with water or simply with mud, a few planks form the roof, but what renders them very warm is that the chimney occupies the outer side, and that you can only enter by a small door at the side of the chimney. The army has passed whole winters under such huts, without suffering, and without sickness.

Particulars as to hutting methods may be read in various orderly books in the New York Historical Society. General McDougall ordered on October 1st, 1779, at West Point, that

The officers command'g Regiments will be particularly attentive to the chimneys of their respective Regiments, and will see that the Funnels are raised so high as to secure the Marquees and Huts from damage either from Fire or Smoke.

At New Windsor, on the 11th of December, 1780, it was noted in the orderly book of Colonel Lamb that

No Hutts are to be built by the men out of the line of Hutts on any pretense whatever.

And under date of December 13th, 1780,

The officers having agreed to build their Hutts uniformly of a size; the length 26 & the width 20 feet in the clear, the Commandant requests the officers to pay strict attention to the building of their respective Hutts to that Demention except the two Hutts on the flanks which are to be two feet larger, on account of the Officers of two companies living together.

He has the pleasure to inform the Off'rs there is the greatest prospect of procuring a sufficiency of boards to make them comfortable in their Hutts. A saw-mill is engaged for the purpose. Two men acquainted with the business are to be turned out of the Regiment to attend it. They will wait on Q M Cunningham for their orders this afternoon.

From Mr. John Stevenson, an aged resident of Fishkill, it was learned in 1917 that there existed then the remains of Revolutionary soldiers' huts in Hell Hollow, a ravine in the mountains about four miles south of the present village and near the Putnam-Dutchess county boundary line. A recent visit to this wild, rocky and rather difficult pass over the mountains revealed, winding up the southeastern slope of Bald Hill, the remains of an ancient road, built at the cost of much labor. At a point upon this road, a few rods north of the glen of the infernal name, where there is a broad view to the east and south, are the remains of stone structures whose reason for existence is difficult to understand unless they were portions of the huts of Revolutionary troops. Excavation here, impossible at the time of the recent visit on account of frost, will probably determine the date and character of these structures. The locality brings to the visitor's mind recollections of passages in *The Spy* by J. Fenimore Cooper.

At the eastern limit of the Highlands, Rhode Island and New York troops at times guarded the passes from Connecticut, and were hutted by the stream which flows out of Lake Mahopac near what were then called Robinson's Mills and later, Red Mills. This Revolutionary encampment was known as Rhode Island Village.

Seven miles in a direct line nearly due west from Rhode Island Village and along the New York and Albany Post Road was a long

line of huts, extending south from the cross roads at Hopper's, an intersection marked on modern maps as Travis Corners. These military settlements were occupied by New England troops and were named by them Soldiers' Fortune, and New Boston. A few scattered stoneheaps mark the former sites of some of their hut chimneys, it is said. New Boston seems to have been named thus by New Hampshire troops after a village in their home state. A British spy who visited the locality reported to Sir Henry Clinton in March, 1781, that the principal encampments along the Post Road were the Continental Village and "Along the road up to Hopper's (called the Soldiers' Fortune)."

Light is shed upon the location of two campsites of this vicinity by a letter from the commandant of West Point, Gen. William Heath, to Washington, under date of November 13th, 1781, in which he wrote:

The New Hampshire Line, disliking the hutts at Soldier's Fortune, and the distance they must be obliged to fetch their wood, are hutting a little more to the eastward, on the road that leads down to Col. Drake's; they are erecting exceeding good huts—

The new camp he mentions was known as the Hampshire Huts, but in Blake's *History of Putnam County*, the name is erroneously given as Hempstead Huts and later mapmakers and writers have perpetuated the mistake. A few hutsites are discernible in this lonely place about a mile east of Travis Corners on the old Gillette place, a quarter of a mile up the brook which flows into the Canopus or Sprout Brook from the northwest. Many metallic buttons from the site of Hampshire Huts were acquired by the late Mr. James Nelson in 1892, among them some which showed the presence here of the New England Line Regiments.

A military rendezvous of importance during the Revolution was located at the southern entrance to the Highlands along the same New York and Albany Post Road, near the bridge over Canopus Brook. In this vicinity, in the spring of 1777 was established the Continental Village, a name still known in the neighborhood and perpetuated by Mr. Stuyvesant Fish, who calls his extensive holdings of land here, Continental Village Farm. In early Revolutionary documents the locality is mentioned as the Gorge of the Mountains. Several redoubts were erected on eminences commanding the southern approach of the Post Road and barracks for two thousand men and storehouses were built and cattle

collected and pastured nearby in the valley fields. Col. Beverly Robinson owned grist, fulling and saw mills here, as well as the mills near Lake Mahopac, mentioned above. A local tradition, recorded as coming from the lips of Charity Nelson who lived in the Mandeville house at what is now Garrison, recites that when the Hessians and British troops burned the Continental Village, it was Col. Beverley Robinson who accompanied the detachment which landed near her home and descended upon the ill-fated settlement from the north. If so they apparently effected a junction with others who marched up from Peekskill. Members of the Field Exploration Committee have explored in and about Continental Village at times during the three years past and have found there signs of eighteenth century occupation and have seen cannon balls said to have been found along the brook, and Revolutionary bayonets plowed up near the redoubt on Cedar Hill. Structural remains may be discerned about a furlong from the Village beside the road which runs up along Canopus Brook. The location coincides with what appear on the Erskine maps as "Burned Barracks," and excavation here has disclosed suggestive debris, and thus far no numbered buttons.

The redoubt on Cedar Hill, near a building connected with the Catskill Aqueduct building, is fairly well preserved and so is another interesting fortification a half mile to the northwest, across the road from the present Owen house. This dwelling occupies the site, it is believed, of a house marked on more than one Revolutionary map as Abigail Argol's. On the west side of the Post Road just north of the fork in the immediate vicinity of this redoubt and of Abigail Argol's, there is shown on one of the Erskine maps what appears to have been intended to represent a long line of buildings, perhaps soldier's huts. A vague local tradition corroborates the theory.

Mr. W. J. Briggs, an elderly resident of Continental Village, describes a redoubt which stood on the hill adjoining and to the west of the Post Road and Canopus Brook. It stood, he says, uphill to the west of the now unused Methodist church, but he demolished it when he was a young man, in order to clear the level space for the plow. The site of this former upland meadow is now wooded. Exploration of the site has shown an ancient fireplace in the ruins of a stone chimney, and what are possibly the ruins of several hut-sites.

There is said to be a Revolutionary campsite a mile and a half directly west from Continental Village, along a brook which empties into Annsville Creek from the west.

On the O'Connor map of Putnam County of 1854, is shown what is called "Old Camp Oven", on the west side of the Catrock Road, a mile and a half southeast of Garrison railroad station. This clue, added to information obtained from old residents of the county, and careful exploration, led to the discovery here of an extensive Revolutionary campsite which has been identified as that once called Camp Robinson's Farm. The fallen chimneys of many huts appear upon the bush-grown sidehill, and excavation about them has yielded many relics of the soldiers' life, among them buttons of the Connecticut Line troops.

Here the Connecticut Division was encamped during the winters of 1778 and 1779 and part of 1780. Early in December, 1780 the Division, under General Huntington, moved about four miles to the northward into their new hut village, built to cover two thousand men, and provided with an assembly hall, hospital huts, bake ovens, etc. This important camp was known as Connecticut Village, a name often encountered in Highland documents of the later years of the war. Its exact location has not been identified beyond all doubt, but there is evidence which leads to the belief that it was situated along the Mekeel Road, the lower half of which is now abandoned. This road, built in 1772, connects the river road between Garrison and Cold Spring, with the New York and Albany Post Road. It runs from the deRham or former Davenport or Danforth house, east of Constitution Island, in a north northeasterly direction, joining the Post Road beside the house which, during the Revolution, was the home of Elijah Budd.

About half way up this cross road, near the junction with it of a road which runs northward to Nelsonville, have been excavated signs of a Revolutionary camp, including grape shot, broken pieces of soldiers' equipment and numbered regimental buttons of the Continental Connecticut regiments. A short distance north on the last-named road stood, during the war, the house of Uriah Mekeel. His granddaughter, Mrs. Milton Smith, who now resides in the old Budd house, and her sons, point out a spot on a flat ledge of rock adjoining a house now building by Dr. Hans Zinsser,

where the Revolutionary soldiers "ranked" beef carcasses in the winter. They explain that this means "piled up like cord wood." This tradition supports the theory, founded on source documents, that there was a large camp in this vicinity. Other clues to the location of Connecticut Village state that it was "back" of Constitution Island; that it was eight miles below Fishkill; that it was six miles from Continental Village; that it was a mile west from the main (Post) road; that it was between two hills; that a brook ran between the huts and that one might pass it in going from Fishkill to West Point.

Apparently the only other site which can lay claim to Connecticut Village is one to which some of the above clues do not seem to point. There was undoubtedly a Revolutionary camp a mile and a half north of the site described. It lay along the banks of Margaret Brook and may or may not have been an offshoot of Connecticut Village. On the O'Connor map is shown a "Revolutionary Burial Ground" beside Margaret Brook, just above Nelsonville which evidently was reached by the road above-mentioned on which stood the house of Uriah Mekeel. Several persons, now living, say that they remember seeing lines of grave mounds there, but the precise location is lost. Across the brook and road on the west of this site is ground which was known up to a generation ago as the Hut Field and fallen chimneys are said to have been seen hereabouts, but recent search has failed to reveal them to members of the Field Exploration Committee.

The Connecticut Village huts were vacated about the end of June, 1781, according to a diary kept by Capt. J. H. Buell of the 4th Connecticut Regiment:

Our Regiment left the huts and Incamp'd nigh Danforth's, some of the other Regiments went the day before.

This move was in keeping with the custom in the Army, after a winter's occupancy, of vacating the ill-ventilated huts for the more sanitary regime of tent life during warm weather. General McDougall, whose interest in the health of his troops is more than once recorded, ordered on May 27th, 1778, that

Officers are to see that the Mud plaistering About the Hutts be remov'd and every other Method taken to render them as airy as possible; they will also have the powder of a Musquet Cartridge burnt in each Hutt daily to purify the air.

The Danforth or Davenport place, the present residence of Mr. Henry deRham, is a Revolutionary landmark to be reckoned with in studying the history of the Highlands. Erskine's maps give the name correctly as Thomas Davenport, but it seems to have been widely known in the Army as Danford or Danforth. That the Connecticut Village was not far from the place, is made evident when General Heath mentions it as being to the northward of Danforth's and when Captain Buell writes in his diary on December 2d, 1780:

The Connecticut Line got onto their hutting grounds by Mr. Danforth's on the east side of the North River, a little above West Point.

Among the campsites on the east side of the river must also be mentioned Nelson's Point, opposite West Point and tunnelled by the Hudson River Railroad. The locality was much used as a summer tenting ground by various brigades in the latter part of the war.

Major L'Enfant's panoramic picture of West Point and Vicinity, made in 1780, shows an encampment within the limits of the present village of Cold Spring. This particular campground is probably that referred to by Wynant Williamson, Col. Beverly Robinson's spy, who reported to his commander in March, 1781 that there were, on the east side of the river, 200 of the Continental Line, commanded by Colonel Darby, under Bull Hill, as Mount Taurus was called before the days of N. P. Willis.

A campsite is referred to in Revolutionary correspondence of the fall of 1780 as being near the North and South Redoubts. Washington made a tour of inspection to these forts on the very day of the discovery of Arnold's treason. Their outlines may be traced, about three eights of a mile apart, on the mountain a mile east of Garrison. The southern fort is sometimes called Middle Redoubt. Bronze artillery soldiers' buttons of two types, a small cohorn mortar design and a larger one stamped with the figure of a cannon, a flagstaff and a flag, have been dug up near each of these forts, and a garbage pit containing beef bones and other refuse has been excavated near the South Redoubt.

A glimpse into one phase of Revolutionary camp life in the Highlands is to be had in the diary of Lieut. William S. Pennington, of the 2nd Artillery Regiment, who was stationed at the Middle Redoubt:

Mr. Meachem (Lieut., 3rd Mass. Reg't) and myself spent the afternoon and evening with the gentlemen at the North Redoubt at Backgammon and cards.

And a week later

The gentlemen of the North Redoubt dined here and spent most of the day at backgammon.

And, so, life in the hated Highlands had its pleasant hours. Indeed, Major Nicholas Fish, of the 2nd New York Regiment, wrote to Baron von Steuben on July 2, 1780

I know not whence our aversion to this post took birth; so is the fact, however, that myself with others had formed the most despicable Idea of it; and to my agreeable Disappointment I find it not only tolerable, but upon the whole, somewhat pleasant; our amusements indeed are few, and rather circumscribed, but we enjoy the constant Luxury of beholding one of Nature's most magnificent, tremendous and variegated Landscapes.

There is so solemn a Pomp and Grandeur in the vast prodigious Piles that environ us, that I am constantly impressed with ideas of a *serious* and contemplative kind.

The Highlands still present to view the same magnificent, tremendous and variegated landscapes which Major Fish enjoyed, and to which he and his fellow-soldiers added an historic interest, but traces of the Revolutionary occupation are steadily fading into oblivion. It is time to resurrect long forgotten spirits, to bring lost shrines again to light and to put on the modern map these places where American history was made, so that our sons may pause to pay reverence where our fathers passed by unheeding.

WILLIAM S. THOMAS, M.D.

---

#### BIBLIOGRAPHICAL NOTE

Unless otherwise noted, all the books, maps and documents mentioned below may be consulted at the New York Historical Society, 170 Central Park West, New York City.

Blake, *History of Putnam County.*

Pelletreau, *History of Putnam County.*

Ruttenber, *History of Orange County.*

Kidder, *History of the 1st New Hampshire Regiment.*

Stedman, *Civil War in America (Revolution)*

Lossing, *Field Book of the Revolution.*

Thacher, *Military Journal.*

*Fragments from the Diary of Major John Hutchinson Buell.*

*Diary of Lieut. William S. Pennington in the Journal of the Military service*



*Institution*, September, 1883.

William Heath, *Memoirs*.

Henry Dearborn, *Journal*.

*The New York and Albany Post Road* in Hine's *Annual*, 1905.

Colles, *Roads of the United States*; 1789.

*McDougall Papers*; Mss.

*Steuben Papers*; Mss.

*Lord Stirling Papers*; Mss.

*Gates Papers*; Mss.

*Revolutionary Orderly Books*; Mss.

Egleston, *Life of Gen. John Paterson*.

Barbe Marbois, *Complot d'Arnold*.

Abbatt, *Crisis of the Revolution*.

Chastellux, *Travels*.

Anburey, *Travels*.

*Old Forts of the Hudson Highlands*; Unpublished Mss. by Col. Winthrop, 1889.

*Journals of the N. Y. Provincial Congress*.

H. P. Johnston, *Connecticut Men in the Revolution*.

H. P. Johnston, *Battle of Stony Point*.

Force, *American Archives*.

*Memoirs of Gen. John Stark*, 1850.

Boynton, *History of West Point*.

*Capt. Henry Sewall's* (Revolutionary) *Diary*; Mss. in American Antiquarian Society Library, Worcester, Mass.

*Washington's Correspondence with the Officers*; Mss. in Library of Congress, Washington. Index and calendar published and for sale by Supt. of Documents, Washington.

*Sir Henry Clinton's Secret Papers*; Mss. in New York Public Library, N.Y. City.

*Orderly Books and Muster Rolls of the Ninth Mass. Regiment*; Mss. in the Deerfield, Mass. Museum.

Maps of the Hudson Highlands; Mss made by Robert Erskine, F. R. S., and his successor, Simeon DeWitt, Geographers to the American Army.

Map of Putnam County; Published by O'Connor, 1854.

Map of Orange County by J. C. Sidney, published by Newell S. Brown, Newburgh, N. Y., 1850; copy owned by Mr. O. T. Barck of Brooklyn, N. Y.

Map of West Point and Vicinity; Villefranche, 1780; original at West Point Military Academy; reproduced in Boynton, *History of West Point*.

Map of West Point and Vicinity by Hinnichs, a Hessian spy; Mss. in Library of Congress, Washington, D. C.

Map of West Point and Vicinity by an American deserter to the British at Stony Point, 1779; original in Library of Congress; reproduced in *New York Times Sunday Magazine*, September 5, 1920, in an article *Lost Camps of the Hudson Highlands* by W. S. Thomas.

View of West Point and Vicinity by Major L'Enfant, 1780; original at West Point Military Academy; reproduced in Boynton's *History of West Point*.

## THE CALVINIST MIND IN AMERICA<sup>1</sup>

It is a serious historical error to suppose that the great achievements of Americans are chiefly the result of the favorable position, climate and topography of their homeland. The small particulars of coastline and hill barrier, the stretching plains and river pathways, have their part in history, and no one can understand the drama of mankind's development without broad knowledge of the theatre in which it has been played. Nature does profoundly influence the life of men, but it was not alone her rocks and rills, her woods and templed hills that made us what we are. Human thought, human feeling and above all human will went into the making of America; other men would have made another nation.

Self-reliance was the chief trait of the first Americans. They were discontented and ambitious people who hazarded their lives upon an awesome enterprise, supported by their own wills. The courage and the pertinacity, which they so gloriously showed in clinging to this western soil through hard New England winters and the fevers of Virginia, while during those first years some communities were wasted down to one in ten, is worthy of our reverent gratitude. Their singleness of purpose rose to the height of heroism, especially among the settlers of New England, whose purpose was the lofty one of serving God. Carlyle saw in the English Puritans a dignity almost unique: "Few nobler Heroisms, at bottom perhaps no nobler Heroism has ever transacted itself on this earth." "Plantations", wrote Lord Bacon, "are amongst ancient, primitive and heroic works." The emigration was not "for gold, for conquest, or for very restlessness of spirit." They were men, not gods, yet they came here on an enterprise of perfection not surpassed in the epics of Homer and Vergil. The theme of art, the text of sermons, the period of those first settlements is the heroic age of our American history.

---

<sup>1</sup>An address delivered at the Bear Mountain meeting of the New York State Historical Association, October 7, 1920.





An Abandoned Road in the Highlands



Soldier's Buttons Found in the Highlands

Puritanism was not a national affair. It sprung in logical completeness from the mind of a French lawyer; it was practiced first in the city of Geneva, smaller then in 1540 than is today the town that bears its name by the shore of our Lake Seneca; it flourished in the towns of France, in the Netherlands and Scotland before it came to western England. Likewise in America its influence was not pent in between the Berkshires and the sea: the Dutch along the Hudson were good Calvinists; likewise the Huguenots, who man for man will match with any stock which came; while the Scotch-Irish of whom Calhoun may stand as an example, may properly be called the Puritans of the South. So if in these few remarks upon the Calvinist mind in America, we fix attention on New England it is because its principles were there more clearly stated, its practices more characteristic and its record more completely kept.

It is the fashion in many quarters to ridicule the Puritans, to impale the Pilgrim Fathers with the shafts of smart and clever epigram. It is said that a certain professor in Oxford, when reminded that three hundred years ago these zealous men had landed on Plymouth Rock, expressed a petulant regret that Plymouth Rock had not landed on them. That astonishing *History of the United States*, published but a year or so ago from the pen of Mr. Cecil Chesterton, says of New England that "its records read like those of a madhouse where religious maniacs have broken loose and locked up their keepers." They did, indeed, say so much on their own behalf, they themselves and their descendants have been so tireless and insistent in the proclamation of their virtue, that it is but natural that impatient critics should arise to answer them. Their virtues, it is true, did overreach themselves at times and turn to vices: their introspection did become morbidity; their thrift did touch on stinginess, if not on avarice; their eye for sin made them uncomfortable neighbors. Their sense of beauty was indeed repressed and stunted, for, as Tolstoi has observed with melancholy truth, in the discernment of moral and aesthetic values, extraordinary keenness in the one seemingly cannot be cultivated without a corresponding dullness in the other. They were positive men, and positive men arouse resentment.

But if we knew as much of other groups, we would be more acquainted with their faults. When condemning the Boston-

ians for the persecution of the Quakers, it is well to bear in mind that twelve thousand of that unhappy sect languished at one time in English jails, more than one in ten succumbing to the prison fever; in America no witch was executed after 1692, whereas across the sea in Merrie England five witches went to death forty years after the last had faced the Salem gallows. It is properly complained that the New England Puritans were intolerant of opposition in their enterprise. They were not, it is too true, apostles of sweetness and light; but the right to be wrong in matters of opinion is securely won in few places in the world today. It is said that there were hypocrites among them. What a testimony in their favor! Counterfeits are not offered save in those places where men honor and cherish the genuine. Let us concede that it would have been a sad America if none but Puritans had come, but estimating at the same time what we would have lost without their courage, their decency and their lofty thought, if none had come at all.

There were various strains in this Puritanism. The austerities of Massachusetts Bay, the gentler spirit of the Plymouth Separatists, softened by Dutch training, whose attitude, if not whose polity, was carried by Hooker to Connecticut, and the soul-liberty of Roger Williams in Rhode Island, seem and were quite different. The first stood for intolerance, the second for toleration, and the third for freedom; yet we shall see that all had certain ideals in common developed in greater or in less degree. The Calvinist mind, here exhibited has left us certain American traits as a heritage.

They each and all believed that the individual stood in relation to a universal plan. Salvation was not the motive of the Puritan; the Lord had long ago attended to that matter;—and fortunately most who gave it earnest thought decided that He had placed them among the elect, exclusive as that body was. But the elected individual still had a *duty*. He must in his conduct evidence and illustrate God's greatness. Nothing he could do would change the course of destiny determined by that dread Architect and Sovereign, but this individual was responsible to act as God would have him act. It was this sense of individual responsibility, of duty that did not lie beyond performance if approached with a heroic *will*, that did much for America. Later in the nineteenth

century the Unitarians of New England made God more a Father than a Sovereign, but His children as joint-creators invested themselves in His great enterprise with the same sense of personal responsibility that their ancestors had cherished as they gave witness to His perfection through their lives.

But with most Puritans there was an even stronger sense of group responsibility. The state existed to keep order while the saints in the church could work out their perfect Christian society. In Geneva, Calvin had insisted that certain upright men should "have an eye on the life of everyone" and report "any notable vice" for admonition. So every man's conduct fell under public scrutiny and the habit of minding other people's business in the cause of God and good became a folk-way of Americans. It was this that placed amendments in our fundamental law; the thirteenth, fourteenth, fifteenth, in some part, and certainly the eighteenth, express this old idea of group responsibility for the conduct of the individual.

In the matter of democracy we find but slight approval from the first Bostonians. John Cotton said he did "not conceive that even God did ordain [it] as a fit government, either for church or commonwealth;" Governor Winthrop accounted it "the meanest and worst of all governments." Again he spoke of the unsafeness of referring matter of counsel or judicature to the body of the people, "*quia* the best part is always the least, and of that best part the wiser is always the lesser."

Yet despite this attitude of magistrates and clergymen even the colony of Massachusetts Bay became progressively more democratic because of certain Calvinistic principles and practices. "Modern Democracy", observes Professor Borgeaud, "is the child of the Reformation, not of the reformers." In rejecting the succession of the bishops, a new foundation for the visible church was found in the covenant, on which church government rested by consent of the governed. The Pilgrims carried this conception of agreement as the base of law into secular affairs and produced their famous compact in the cabin of the *Mayflower*. Acting in their spirit Thomas Hooker, as he founded Hartford, laid down these principles that "the choice of public magistrates belongs with the people by God's own allowance" and it is in the people's "power to set bounds and limitations of power and place

which they call them.....because the foundation of society is laid firstly in consent of the people." Seven months later, in January, 1639, came the Fundamental Orders of Connecticut, the first written constitution in the English-speaking world. Considering the Bible as a part of the covenant, the Puritan arrived at the conception of a fundamental written law superior to rulers, kings and all. In 1641 the colonists of Boston and surrounding towns drew up the Body of Civil Law, which likewise had some semblance to a written constitution.

The American Puritans, in sharp contrast to the Lutherans and Anglicans, stood opposed to all man-made distinctions, and possessed a horror of a landed aristocracy. Perhaps the best example of democracy was the town meeting into which a larger and larger number were admitted as the idea of government resting on consent gained more and more acceptance. At any rate, New England in Revolutionary days was the most democratic part of America, though, when in 1793 its citizens observed that Thomas Jefferson apparently endorsed the democrats of Paris in stamping out religion, even western Massachusetts, lately the scene of Shays's Rebellion, joined the Federalists in conservatism.

Ill-informed enthusiasts delight to praise New England Puritans as apostles of religious freedom, though an hour's reading will demonstrate that at least the colonists of Massachusetts Bay cared for no one's liberty except their own. We attribute development in this respect to such influences as the necessities of Baltimore, the fine idealism of Roger Williams and the indifferentism of the nationalists. But as the historian, Gardiner, once remarked, "As a religious belief for individual men, Calvinism was eminently favorable to the progress of liberty." It was the tendency of the sixteenth century to center everything in the state. Lutherans and Anglicans accepted their direction in religion from the throne, but Calvin checked this tendency with the concept of a Protestant Church absolutely free of state control. The constant opposition of his followers to the appointment of a bishop to America, must be reckoned as a service to religious liberty.

Certainly wherever Calvinism made its way it was a force for education. Starting with the tenet that the Bible was the all-sufficient rule of Christian life, it was clearly indispensable to know exactly what it meant. A learned ministry, familiar with the



ancient tongues in which the Scriptures were originally written, followed of necessity, and in 1636 the legislature of Massachusetts made a grant of four hundred pounds to help in the support of Harvard College, the first grant by the people for support of education in the history of Anglo-Saxon institutions. If it is said that the clergy were the only learned class throughout New England, it may be answered that other colonies had no learned class at all. In the middle of the eighteenth century, for example, our own City of New York had but thirteen men of college training. Learning at Harvard and at Yale, it is quite true, at first meant narrowly the study of divinity. But the founders builded better than they knew. Close and careful application of the mind to one special problem must develop faculties which will eventually seek a wider range of exercise, and though the Puritans who began their "school of the prophets" in 1636 would doubtless have been quite chagrined to see the outcome, they did begin to train the young New England intellect to forward human knowledge as well as that divine. In thus disciplining the mind to rigorous inquiry for truth, the Puritan supplied his own corrective for the tendencies toward fanatical one-sidedness.

But Calvinism did not rest content with seminaries for its leaders; learning had to be extended at the same time that it was advanced. In 1639 a printing press was set at work in Boston. Eight years after came the act requiring every town to keep a common school. It was for a later generation that Governor Berkeley thanked God there were no free schools in Virginia; there were in England no public schools as we understand the term, till after 1870. So in this zeal to know, this general systematic plan of schooling for all children, the Puritan stood out as leader. Wherever through this broad land there is heard the clangor of the school bell shattering the morning peace, there is found the fine memorial of New Englandism. Today the citizen who gladly pays his mounting school tax is the spiritual heir of those earnest men of 1647.

At Provincetown, in Massachusetts, where the *Mayflower* first dropped her anchor, there soon will rise a statue to the Pilgrim Mothers. This is a recognition as proper as it is belated, for tradition has it that the first foot set on Plymouth Rock was that of a woman, Mary Chilton. By the middle of the seventeenth

century it had been proved that European colonies across the sea could be successful. Before that time, at least, the enterprise was for the resolute alone. During this period of stress and suffering, in the first adventure of no colony, from Labrador to Cape Horn, did women bear an equal share, except in the Calvinist settlements of New England and New Netherland. After that first devastating winter, when half the hundred Pilgrims had been struck down by starvation and disease, the *Mayflower* spread its sails and turned toward England, but the women standing with the men saw her disappear without a murmur; not one begged release from her high calling, to return to the safe and comfortable land that she had left. The English came as builders of more English homes. The Indian half-breeds of the St. Lawrence valley and the Caribbean shores were not found along our own Atlantic coastal plain. And nowhere among the settlements were the family and the mother more respected than among these northern Calvinists.

The women and the men worked together, for everybody worked. The Calvinist, whether English, Dutch or Scotch from Ireland had no place or patience for a leisure class. He read the Book of Proverbs with a special relish; "Go to the ant thou sluggard, consider her ways and be wise" (VI, 6). "Wealth gotten by vanity shall be diminished; but he who gathereth by labor shall increase" (XIII, 11). "The soul of the sluggard desireth and hath nothing, but the soul of the diligent shall become fat" (XIII, 4). "Slothfulness casteth into a deep sleep; and an idle soul shall suffer hunger" (XIX, 15). In insisting on a Sabbath day of rest, Calvin did not overlook the importance of a proper relaxation of the body, but he likewise emphasized the other part of the commandment: "Six days shalt thou labor and do all thy work,"—not "mayst" but "shalt"; this was a positive injunction. Idleness was fined and spendthrifts might be excommunicated. Work and righteousness were coupled in the Calvinist idea of duty, and if historically America has honored work beyond most other nations, it may be traceable in part to this historic influence. Today here as well as elsewhere there may be seen, perhaps, a lapse of zeal for righteousness and with it a less regard for the high dignity of work. "Secularism", as Dean Inge remarks, "Like every other religion has produced its eschatology—the greatest idleness of the greatest number." Such was not the ideal of the Pilgrim Fathers.

The dead past cannot bury its dead; they rise upon us from their graves to warn and encourage and to teach us what we really are. Millions of men and women of a hundred different kinds have followed to these shores; a new industrial system has come, cheapening goods and men; new ideals of social order are considered and accepted. But the moral vision of the Puritan still gives us purpose. I hope and I believe that we are better than those ancient Calvinists. I hope and I believe that three centuries from now when our children of nine generations hence are called to celebrate the six hundredth anniversary of the Pilgrims, they can say that they as a society are better far than we. But progress is not made by shutting the book of history, and they will be better if they heed the lessons of the Puritans. Our thought has been profoundly changed, but if our souls march on with theirs, America is safe.

DIXON R. FOX.

## THE TOWN OF DOVER ON STATEN ISLAND

Many of the English maps of Staten Island prior to 1730 show a town or village by the name of Dover. Local history and tradition not having anything to say about it, its existence has been doubted, in the belief that it was due to a misapprehension of the geographers.

In the *Memoirs of the Stilwell Family*, a family which had a leading part in the history of Staten Island immediately after the English took possession in 1664, considerable is said about Dover and the connection of the Stilwells with the place, much of which has since been found to be erroneous.

It is there stated that "John Stilwell settled immediately below the Narrows to which he gave the name of Dover. This tract of land which was subsequently granted by the government to his grandson John Stilwell, in consideration of the improvements originally made thereon by his ancestors, was the site of the fortified town of Dover, subsequently built and occupied by Nicholas and his children, and which was for many years the most important and populous settlement on Staten Island. The place has passed into such utter oblivion, that its mention here is probably the first reference to its existence which has been made for upward of a hundred and fifty years.\*\*\*\*\*The only memento of it now remaining upon the Island, is the road which led to it, and which still bears the name of the "Old Town Road"\*\*\*\*\*A number of French Huguenots from Rochelle, who had arrived in New Netherland a few months before had taken up lands in the neighborhood, and for protection against any sudden attack of the savages, had erected a small block house on the spot. Thither Nicholas now removed (about 1664) with his four youngest sons\*\*\*\*\*and his son-in-law Nathaniel Brittain. They laid out a fortified village upon a plan similar to that of Gravesend, with the block house in the center, around which they erected their dwellings and then enclosed the whole village with a line of palisades, and the town of Dover became at once an important settlement."<sup>1</sup>

The Dover as described in the Stilwell Memoirs as above, is clearly thought by the author to be the village which was more commonly known by the name Old Town. Many maps however show both Old Town and Dover, with the latter much to the south

of Old Town and usually near Great Kills. It is the purpose of this paper with the aid of the early records and maps to locate Dover as accurately as practicable.

An inventory of the estate of Walraven Luten, one of the founders of Old Town, is recorded in the first volume of New York Wills, and it is dated "Dover on Staten Island ye 16th day of Jan. 1671"<sup>(2)</sup> The records also show that Walraven Luten was the father of Abraham Lutine and that the latter sued Francisco Martino Dec. 21st 1681, claiming that Martino who had married Walraven Luten's widow was in possession of the estate.<sup>(3)</sup> The location of the property surveyed for Martino in 1676<sup>(4)</sup> and granted to him after a later survey in 1686<sup>(5)</sup> and where Francis Martino did live according to road record 1708<sup>(6)</sup> is shown on the accompanying map. The property was bounded on the west by Gideon Marlett in 1676<sup>(4)</sup> and by Isaac Billeau in 1686<sup>(5)</sup> In the survey for Martino in 1676 a house lot in the Old Town next to Peter Billeau and a house lot on the south east side of the town are also described.<sup>(4)</sup> The Luten inventory was "taken by Gideon Marlett Constable in the presence of Peter Balew, Simon Corne, Tyse Barnsen and others."<sup>(2)</sup> We have seen that Gideon Marlett owned the adjoining property to the west of Martino, Peter Billeau, joint founder with Luten of Old Town,<sup>(7)</sup> and associated with him as a justice of the first court established in Old Town,<sup>(8)</sup> owned property only a short distance to the west, if some of it did not adjoin.<sup>(9)</sup> Simon Corne owned the property adjoining Martino on the east which was granted to Peter Newe in 1685.<sup>(10)</sup> From these circumstances it seems highly probable that this Martino property in Old Town and perhaps the house lot next to Peter Billeau was the estate of Walraven Luten where the inventory was dated at Dover on Staten Island. Martino and also Abraham Lutine it should be noted possessed other property not far to the south "in the new lots at the Old Town"<sup>(11)</sup>

Nicholas Stilwell came to Staten Island about 1664 and settled at Old Town it is said. He was elected constable of "yor Towne" in 1667, <sup>(12)</sup> and died on Staten Island Dec. 28th 1671, leaving his estate to his widow Ann Stilwell.<sup>(13)</sup> She soon afterward bought property in Gravesend where she and her husband formerly resided, and moved to that locality. In the Gravesend town records the deed of this property is recorded June 21st 1672 in which John

Jonson Van Rine of Gravesend conveys property in Gravesend to "Anne stilwell widow of dover one Staten Island, her heares, Executors etc."<sup>(14)</sup> It becomes important therefore to know where Nicholas Stilwell's estate was located. We have no direct information fixing it, or records so far as known as to what disposition Ann stilwell made of it, but we do have several records which incline one to the opinion that she disposed of it to her son-in-law Nathaniel Brittain and that it included the easterly part of his property granted in 1677. This appears probable from the fact that in 1671 lots for Mr. [Nicholas] Stilwell and Nathaniel Brittain were to be continued on the neck of land upon the hills indicating that their lots adjoined and were south-east of the neck of land on which the Country Club is located.<sup>(15)</sup> Apparently Nicholas Stilwell lived close to Peter Billeau, for on Jan 15th 1670 Ann Stilwell wife of Nicholas complained of Peter Billeau and wife on account of several assaults on her son and daughter, and both parties were bound to keep the peace.<sup>(16)</sup> From these circumstances we think that the Stilwell property was immediately west of Peter Billieu's estate and east of that of Nathaniel Brittain's, becoming the easterly portion of the Brittain property as we know it from the grant of 1677.<sup>(17)</sup>

One of the greatest causes for litigation that arose in the community was the damage done by cattle getting into cultivated enclosures. The Duke's laws had stringent regulations regarding fences, and severe penalties for persons who did not maintain their portion of the common fence enclosing the cultivated area.<sup>(18)</sup> It is the failure to maintain these fences that brings Dover into prominence. On Dec. 13th 1671, Thomas Lovelace, Justice of the Peace, complained at the Court of Sessions at Gravesend, of "the inhabitants of the town of Dover upon Staten Island for their insufficiency of fiencing," and it was ordered "that the constable at a towne meeting do warn them to make their fences substantiall."<sup>(19)</sup>

Notice was given by an order of Feb 24th 1673, "that there shall be a Drift of all Horses & Cattle upon Staten Island," and all persons possessed of any there, were desired "to appeare or send some one person to the Towne of Dover to take notice of their respective Horses or Cattle to the end they may bee viewed and marked according to the Lawes in such Cases provided."<sup>(15)</sup> On the 21st of June, 1676, Nath. Brittain brought an action against Nathan Whitman

and William Brittain for "pulling of their part of the comon Fence of the Towne of Dover upon Staten Island and removing the same for their particular use."<sup>(20)</sup> Nathaniel Brittain lived as we find from his patent dated 1677 at Dongan Hills between what we now know as Liberty Ave. and Jefferson Ave. A tract in the Old Town was granted to Mary Brittain in 1686<sup>(21)</sup> who was mentioned as a widow in 1687.<sup>(22)</sup> Nathaniel Brittain and William Brittain, who died before Dec. 31, 1683, when an inventory of his estate was recorded,<sup>(21a)</sup> appear to be the only male Brittaines mentioned in the Staten Island records at that time.

Thomas Walton in 1680 made a complaint against William Brittain in the Staten Island court on account of Brittain's unruly horses breaking Walton's fence, and on account of Brittain's neglect to maintain his own fence.<sup>(23)</sup> Mary Brittain's patent was separated from Thomas Walton's farm by a patent to Sarah Scidmore or Sarah Whitman as she is called in the records of 1680. On Oct. 3rd 1680 Sarah Whitman brought action in the local court against William Brittain and "the court ordereth that the Deft. shall seat up and gett forty panell of soefesiant fense for the yous of Sarah Whitman"<sup>(24)</sup> The land granted to Sarah Scidmore in 1687 was referred to as belonging to Sarah Scidmore in one part of a document dated 1685 and as belonging to Sarah Whitman in another part.<sup>(25)</sup> In 1668 the property belonged to Nathan Whitman according to the description in an adjoining patent of that date.<sup>(26)</sup> An inventory of the estate of Nathan Whitman was made in August 1679 and his widow Sarah Whitman was confirmed as administrator Jan. 26th 1679.<sup>(27)</sup> These records, all leading to the same conclusion, leave us in little doubt but that in 1676, when suit was brought against Nathan Whitman and William Brittain for pulling up their part of the common fence of the town of Dover, William Brittain owned and lived on the property granted to Mary Brittain in 1686, <sup>(27a)</sup> and that Nathan Whitman owned and lived on the property granted to Sarah Scidmore in 1687.<sup>(27b)</sup>

We therefore see that all the places referred to in the records as in Dover were in the Old Town, and that Dover must include Old Town. The name was probably used in two senses, one, as a territorial division, and the other as a village, as in the case of other early settlements like Gravesend, New Utrecht, Jamaica, Hempstead, etc. In this case the boundary lines were not so im-

portant, and probably were not definitely fixed. The town possibly included all the area that was well populated, where fences were built in common to enclose the cultivated area and protect it from the cattle which were allowed at large. The name Dover was also used to locate a village, as when all persons possessed of horses or cattle were requested "to appear or send some one in person to the 'Town of Dover'" to have their cattle marked.<sup>(15)</sup>

The English after taking possession in 1664 had a passion for changing names, and as pointed out by the State Historian, Dr. Sullivan, they probably did not overlook such an opportunity to give a name to this hitherto nameless town. It was the more important to do so now that they were building up another settlement which soon came to be called New Town (New Dorp) on the Island.

It is evident that the name of Dover was not popular, for it does not occur so far as is known in any of the local records and only between 1671 and 1676 in the records of New York, Gravesend, and The Court of Sessions of the West Riding of Yorkshire. It may possibly have been used only in legal documents. John E. Stillwell M.D. suggests that the name was probably given on account of the bluffs at the Narrows resembling the bluffs at Dover, England, and this resemblance was pointed out by Dancckaerts in his journal 1679.<sup>(28)</sup>

Dover is shown on quite a number of English maps and on some French and Dutch maps. The earliest map showing Dover that has been found with the assistance of Mr. Phillips in charge of the map division Library of Congress is a "Map of New Jersey in America, by John Seller and William Fisher," not dated, but internal evidence gives the date of depiction as 1676, or possibly a year or two later. It will be noticed that Dover located on the south shore some distance from the Narrows is the only village indicated on Staten Island. The map of New England in Seller's large atlas dated 1675 does not show Dover.<sup>(29)</sup> Another early map is entitled "A Mapp of Virginia, Mary-land, New Jersey, New York and New England, by John Thorton," and is not dated. The date of depiction as found from an examination of the map is 1677, or possibly a year or two later. The map is similar to the one first described. Dover corresponding in location fairly well with Old Town, is the only village shown thereon.<sup>(30)</sup>



A third map of diminutive size showing Dover only, on Staten Island, is entitled "New Iarsey by John Seller." It is contained in "A new systeme of geography by John Seller (London) 1690. The date of depiction is 1682 or possibly a year or two later. An edition of this geography dated 1685 does not show Dover.<sup>(31)</sup>

The above three maps are the only ones the writer has found showing Dover that were drafted prior to 1684, and they show no other village or settlement on Staten Island. All other maps examined show Perth City (Perth Amboy) or other towns which indicate a date later than 1684. They also show other towns besides Dover on Staten Island as well. Some of these later maps we describe as follows:

A map in the English Pilot dated 1707, the date of depiction being later than 1684 shows on Staten Island, Wells, Old Towne, Dover and Billop.<sup>(32)</sup>

An undated map by Philip Lea, London, the date of depiction being about 1690, shows Wells, Old Town, New Town, Dover and Billop. Dover is located at the head of the Great Kills and the map appears to have been executed with some degree of accuracy.<sup>(33)</sup>

Chart of the Atlantic Ocean from Buttons Island to Port Royal, London, 1728, shows Staten Island with Palmer, Dover, and Billop thereon. The date of depiction is not earlier than 1684.<sup>(34)</sup>

Moll's map of New York Harbor 1708-1730 has the following places on Staten Island, Wels, Old Towne, Newtown, Dover and Billop. It shows Dover at the head of the Great Kills and appears to be executed with some regard for accuracy.<sup>(35)</sup>

Bay and Port of York, Capitol of New York, Paris 1764. The map is evidently copied from much earlier English maps and is very inaccurate in its outlines. It is noteworthy however as being the only map showing Dover, in its relation to the roads on Staten Island. It is shown on the Amboy Road at its junction with the road from New Town, and opposite Great Kills. The location given corresponds very well with Stony Brook.<sup>(36)</sup>

A manuscript map by Robert Ryder dated 1670, but which shows places not in existence until 1674 or 6, locates Old Town, New Town, Billop, Palmer, Lovelace, Norwood, and Walton on Staten Island, and does not show Dover. This is particularly important, for Ryder was thoroughly acquainted with Staten

Island, and had made many surveys thereon. We may be reasonably sure from this circumstance that Dover did not exist apart from these other villages or settlements when the map was made.<sup>(37)</sup>

The maps later than 1684 show Dover located much south of Old Town and those which appear to have been made with some care as Lea's and Moll's show it at the head of the Great Kills. It is noteworthy that the name does not occur in the Land Papers or Patents although Old Town and New Dorp are often referred to.

It has been suggested that probably the geographers were not aware of the identity of Old Town and Dover and therefore located them apart. Such a case occurs on a map of about 1690 reproduced in Stokes' *Iconography of Manhattan Island*, Vol. 11 pl. 55, where Milford and Newark are shown in different places, the maker evidently not knowing that the name of the town had been changed from Milford to Newark. The many maps later than 1684 which show Dover on Great Kills incline the writer to believe, however that the town center had been removed from Old Town to some other point, and of this there are a number of hints in contemporary records; for example Danckaerts in 1679 says in reference to Old Town "There were seven houses, only three in which any body lived. The others were abandoned, and their owners had gone to live on better places on the island, because the ground around this village was worn out and barren."<sup>(38)</sup>

In a deed dated 1669 land between Nathaniel Brittain and the highway is said to be in "the towne upon Staten Island"<sup>(39)</sup> and in 1670 Denton says that there is only one village on the Island.<sup>(40)</sup> In 1674 there seems to have been only one village on Staten Island as orders were given "to repair by the first opportunity to the village on the aforesaid Island and there convene a meeting of the town."<sup>(41)</sup> Danckaert also says after visiting Old Town and New Dorp, that "we had now no more villages to go to but went from one plantation to another."<sup>(42)</sup> Evidently Old Town was the seat of town meetings and courts until after 1674. Later the settlement of the Island proceeded with greater rapidity and new villages were established. The movement of the first settlers from Old Town is indicated by survey in 1675 for patents of land near Great Kills for Peter Billeau and Gideon Marlett, two of the leaders in the town.<sup>(43)</sup>

The oldest record book of Richmond County, started in 1680 apparently, has records of town courts held in 1680 and later. It fails however to mention the place where the courts were held. The records almost invariably begin as follows, "At a Court held on Staten Island By the Constable and ouerscars of the seam"<sup>(44)</sup>

The free holders and inhabitants of Staten Island chose commissioners to levy a tax to pay £24 - debt which had accumulated in the three years prior to 1681, and they ordered that every lot of land within the Island containing 80 acres, should be taxed four shillings six pence. £6, was to pay "obadiah Holmes for three years salare as a Town clarke ordered at a Town Metting."<sup>(45)</sup>

In 1675 at a Court of Assizes held in New York, among other things it was ordered "That by reason of the Separation by water Staten Island shall have Jurisdiction of it Selfe; and to have no further dependence on the Court of Long Island."<sup>(46)</sup> The Court of Sessions to which cases were appealed from the town court was held at Gravesend, and its records show however, that Staten Island matters were handled there as late as June 1683.<sup>(47)</sup> "At a Cort of Sessions held at Gravesend in the west Ryding of Yorkshire upon Long Island etc. Dec. 20th 1682 Ordered that the constable and Overseers of Staten Island doe make a Rate for the building of a strong and sufficient Prison in some convenient place upon the said Island & also a Town House."<sup>(48)</sup> On November 1st 1683 the county of Richmond was established and laws were passed providing for town courts, a Court of Sessions, and a Court of Oyer and Terminer.<sup>(49)</sup> The "Records of the Court of Sessions and Common Pleas 1710-1743" which were thought to be lost were recently examined in the County Clerk's Office by E. C. Delavan Esq. who found that the book contained a record of a court held at Stony Brook as early as 1718, and a record of a court held in the Court House at Stony Brook in 1723.<sup>(50)</sup>

It seems probable therefore that the growth and shifting of population caused Old Town to be abandoned as the political centre some time after 1674 and probably not earlier than about 1679 or 80 for a more central location. We infer in consequence of the Court of Sessions record that the new location was at Stony Brook where the Courts remained until 1729 when they were established at Richmond.<sup>(51)</sup> We also infer that the maps later than 1684 showing Dover near the head of Great Kills show as Dover what we know as Stony Brook, the probable political center at that time.

A French map of the Guyon property and vicinity at Great Kills, found among Land Papers dated 1676, shows two villages, one of which is New Dorp, and the other is apparently Stony Brook.<sup>(52)</sup>

It appears that no political divisions existed on Staten Island from 1678 to 1682 for the town court and the town meeting were for all the inhabitants,<sup>(53)</sup> but this was soon changed for we read in the county records of a warrant to the Constable of the West Division in 1694.<sup>(54)</sup> At a general town meeting held April 1st 1699 a constable, supervisor, two assessors, collector and two surveyors of highways were chosen for each of these three divisions; North Division, West Division, and South Division. The names of the officers of the South Division are those we are familiar with in connection with the town of Dover, namely, Marlet, Lakeman, Whitman, Stilwell, Lawrence and Brittain.<sup>(55)</sup> On the 10th of Feb 1707 the county was divided into three precincts North, West, and South.<sup>(56)</sup> The "Manor of Castle Town" was not included in these divisions for it elected its officials the same as the three divisions.<sup>(57)</sup> On March 7th 1788 a law was passed establishing the towns of Castleton, Southfield, Westfield and Northfield, with substantially the same boundaries, it is believed, as the previously existing divisions.<sup>(58)</sup>

What was Dover then became a part of the town of Southfield, now a part of Ward 4 of the Borough of Richmond.<sup>a</sup>

GEORGE W. TUTTLE.

a The writer is indebted to Dr. James Sullivan, State Historian, and John E. Stillwell M.D. for much information and valuable suggestions.

#### REFERENCES TO AUTHORITIES CITED

1. *Early Memoirs of the Stilwell Family comprising the life and times of Nicholas Stilwell*, by Benj. Marshall Stilwell N. Y. 1878.

2. Dover on Staten Island, ye 16th day of Janry, 1671.

An inventory of ye Estate of Walraven Lutin who hath lately deceased Taken by Gideon Marlett Constable in ye prsence of Peter Balew Simon Corne Tyse Barnson & others.

One Lott of Land & Housing	f 1000
One pair of Working Oxen	f 200
One Horse one Mare one Colt	f 200
Six Cowes	f 400
ffoure Calves	f 100
Two Sowes	f 60
Three of 3 yeares olds	f 120
A Plow & Cart wth ffurniture	f 50
Two Iron Potts	f 20
Two Kettles	f 30
One ffrying Pann	f 12





Three Plattes one Basin	f	16
Two water Payles	f	06
One Pewter Beaker one Sacking cloth	f	04
One Salt Cellar one Saucer	f	04
One Tinn Pott	f	03
A Trammill	f	02
One Bed with Bedding	f	50
A chest	f	10
A cupboard	f	06
Two Tables	f	12
A dozen & a halfe of Spoons	f	03
Two Chayres	f	04

---

 f 2592

*New York County Wills Vol. 1 p.167 original (page 93 copy)*

3. Abraham Luttynne p lt.

Francis Martino deft.

The plt. complains yt the Deft having married his mother, unjustly detained from him the Estate belonging to himself and his sisters due to them by Law wch the Deft refuses to deliver to the said plt. or his sisters his power being questioned from his sisters was prov'd by Cap't Stilwell, the cort allows yt it shall proceed to tryall, two Inventoryes of the plts. Father deceased were produced in cort, the one 2592 guilders, and the other 7250 guilders. Mr De Young deposed saith yt he wrote the Inventory and yt one of the cowes was apprizd at 125 Guilders and he gave 146 for one, Tyse Barenson, Peter Bileau, Loys Lockman deposed who were then overseers. Tys Barenson swears yt he knew nothing of any other Inventory than yt of 7250 Guilders & affirms yt his Hand was to no other to his knowledge. Peter Bileau swears yt. he was desird to goe and take an Inventory of the aforesaid Goods and knows of no other Inventory than that of 7250 Guilders. Loys Lockman swears to the same purpose. The Inventoryes were del'd to the Jury to peruse and to give their opinion in the morning wth severall other papers all of them affirming that the goods in the Inventory menconed were in being when the Inventoryes taken. with several other papers find for the plt. that the Inventory sworn to as aforesaid is a true Inventory and the same was then in the possession of the Admr. The Deft. to pay costs. The cort agreed wth the verdict of the Jury & give Judgement accordingly. The Deft moved for an appeal from ye verdict of the Jury & Judgement of cost to the cort of Assizes which was granted hee putting in security to prosecute his appeal as the Law requires, the deft. to pay cost of suit.

Execucon issued the day of Aug. directed to the Constable of Staten Island his Deputy etc. Court of Sessions West Reding of Yorkshire 21st Dec. 1681.

*Court and Road Records Kings County Vol. 2, 1668 to 1766 p. 150 copy, 243 original.*

4. Francis Martino, a parcel of land below the hills, to the east of the line of Louis Lakman, north west in breadth 43 rods eleven feet, containing 80 acres; a parcel in the old lots on the east side of Gideon Marlett's line, north north west, in width 53 rods, containing 80 acres; two pieces of meadow near the Great Kill, one being the half of No.3, the other the half of No. 13, containing, both salt and fresh, about 16 acres; a house lot in the Oude Dorp next to Piter Bileau, long 23 rods, wide 12 rods; also a house lot on the south east side of the Dorp, long and wide 2 [3?] rods.

Ja: Cortelyou surr.



# old-out ceholder

ing digitized, and will be inserted at a future date.





[Endorsed]

- 4 surveys Monsr. Guyon & Louis Lockman Francis Martino George Comins 1676, Patents for Staten Island to be done forthwith, April 24th 1676. Translation from *Land Papers* Vol. 1, p. 75, by Mr. Van Laer through the courtesy of James Sullivan, State Historian.
5. *Patents* V. 5 p. 342. As to Francis Martino see Riker *History of Harlem* (revised) N.Y. 1904 p. 270. Martino's will dated Oct. 1st 1706 and proved Aug 5th 1707 is recorded in *New York Wills* Vol. 7, p. 414 copy, 316, original.
6. Stillwell *Historical Miscellany* V. 1, p. 52, from Records 1680 Richmond County.
7. *Colonial Documents* V. 13 p. 206.
8. O'Callaghan *Laws and Ordinances of New Netherland* p. 458. *Proc. S. I. Assn. Arts and Sciences* V. 6 p. 37.
9. The property owned by Peter Billeau about 1676 is shown on sketch accompanying this paper. It is described in *Land Papers* V. 1 pp. 65, 75. V. 2 p. 73, also in patent to Thomas Stilwell in 1677, (4 *Patents* 143, 1 *Land Papers* 145, 2 *Land Papers* 73). A deed of 1679, recorded in *Flatbush Town Records* Liber AA of deeds p. 87 of copy, 47 original, conveys property laid out for Hans Christophel in 1685 formerly belonging to Peter Billeau, with the dwelling house thereon. Billeau may also have owned more or less of the property attributed on the sketch to Gideon Marlet. It was owned by Peter Billeau's eldest son Isaac Billeau in 1686. Peter Billeau died about 1702 and his will dated Sept 11 1699 is found in *New York Wills* V. 7 p. 79 copy 72 original.
10. Stillwell *Historical Miscellany* V. 1, p. 18, from Records 1680 Richmond County.
11. Abraham Lutine received a Patent in 1685 (5 *Patents* 283, 2 *Land Papers* 72) for the property near Delaware Ave. belonging to Peter Billeau about 10 years before and according to Lutine's will (*N.Y. Wills* 7 - 75 copy 68 original) lived thereon. He also secured a patent in 1696 for the property between Jefferson and Hunter (Monroe) Avenue owned by Thomas Walton (2 *Land Papers* 67, B deeds 188) and Thomas Stilwell (4 *Patents* 143) in 1677 (6 *Patents* 548, 2 *Land Papers* 83?) Francisco Martino received in 1676 (1 *Land Papers* 75) and in 1686 (5 *Patents* 342) and 1694 (6 *Patents* 443) the property between Hunter Ave. (Monroe Ave.) and Lincoln Ave. Grant City. See sketch.
12. *Colonial Documents* V. 13, p. 415. *Proc. S. I. Assn. A. and S.* V. 6, p. 52.
13. *New York Wills* V. 1, p. 168 original, p. 93 copy, p. 169 original p. 94 copy.
14. *Gravesend Town Records* Book 5 Deeds and Leases 1672-1686, p. 7 original p. 3 copy.
15. *N.Y. Executive Council Minutes*-Francis Lovelace 1668-73 V. 1, p. 87.
16. "Upon the complaint of Ann the wife of Nicholas Stillwell against Peter Billew and his wife for several assaults and Abuses committed on her son and daughter the Court have ordered that if the said Peter Bellew or his wife shall from this day forward attempt the same or if the said Ann Stillwell or Thomas her sonn or his wife shall be guilty of the like contrary to law the first party so offending shall forfeit as a fine to the publike use of f 200 and also be bound to the peace.  
Court of Sessions of the West Riding of Yorkshire 15th June 1670.  
*Court and Road Records Kings' County* V.2, 1668-1766, p.40 original, p.30 copy.
17. *Patents* V. 4 p.142, 1 *Land Papers* 133.
18. *Colonial Laws of New York* V.1, p.21.
19. "Att a Court of Sessions held at Gravesend the 13th of December by his Majties Authority on the 23rd year of the Raigne of souveraigne Lord Charles the Second (by the Grace of God) of greate Brittaine france and Ireland King defendr of the ffaith & in the yeare of our Lord God 1671.

Thomas Lovelace Esqr one of his Majties Justices of the peace prsents the Inhabitants of the towne of Dover upon Staten Island for the insufficiency of flencing. Itt is ordered that the constable att a towne Meeting do warne them to make their fences substantiall and whoever shall neglect, shall be fined according to law and pay all the damages his or their neighbors shall for the future sustayne.

*Court and Road Records Kings' County V. 2, 1668-1766 p.64 original p.48 copy.*

20. Stillwell's *Historical Miscellany V. 1 p. 225. Court and Road Records Kings' County V. 2, p.95 original, p.71 copy.*
21. *Patents V.5, p. 344.*
- 21.a Liber B of Deeds, p.4 Richmond County.
22. Liber B of Deeds, p.72 Richmond County.
23. Stillwell's *Historical Miscellany V. 1, p. 1. Records 1680 Richmond County.*
24. Stillwell's *Historical Miscellany V. 1, p. 4. Records 1680 Richmond County.*
25. *Land Papers V. 2, p.67*
26. *Patents V. 3, p. 13.*
27. *S. I. Assoc. Arts and Sciences Proc. V. 6, p. 41, Liber 1-2 New York Wills p. 25 copy, 428 original, p. 260 copy, 429 original.*
- 27a. *Patents V. 5, p. 344.*
- 27b. *Patents V. 6, p. 251.*
28. *Danckaerts Journal, 1679-80 p. 51.*
29. The original print in the Library of Congress.

The partition line between East and West New Jersey fixes the approximate date of the depiction of the map. The deed of division East Jersey and West Jersey was executed July 1st 1676 "from Little Egg Harbor to 41st degree of lat. in Hudson's River etc." (New Jersey Archives 1 ser. VI, p.20) This appears to be the latest feature of the map which was probably issued soon after this division was made.

30. The original print was in the possession of Mr. Henry N. Stevens of London in 1911. It is reproduced in Stokes, *Iconography of Manhattan Island V. 2, C. 56.* The date of depiction is approximately determined by the appearance of Budlinton town now Burlington which was founded in 1677. The activities of James Wasse in founding settlement in 1676-7 are indicated also.
31. The date is approximately determined from the fact that Philadelphia and other settlements founded by William Penn in 1682 are shown thereon and nothing of later date. Copies of the *Geography* of Seller are in the library of the American Geographical Society and the Library of Congress.
32. This 1707 edition of the 4th book of the English Pilot is in the library of the Boston Athenaeum.
33. An inset on a larger map entitled "A new map of New England, New York New Jersey, Pennsylvania, Maryland and Virginia by Philip Lea, London. A photographic copy is in the possession of the Association. The original print is in the New York Public Library.
34. This map is in *Atlas Maritimus and Commercialis* London, 1728, New York Public Library.
35. This is an inset on a *Map of North America* dedicated to Lord J. Somers. The map is in *The World Described Herman Moll*, London, 1708-1730.
36. In Bellin, J. N. *Le Petit Atlas Maritime*, Paris, 1764. A photographic copy is in the possession of the Association.
37. The original manuscript map is in the possession of the New York Historical Society. A photographic copy is in the possession of the Association.
38. Danckaerts, Jasper, *Journal of 1679-80 p. 72. Proc. S. I. Assn. Arts & Sciences V. 6, p. 40.*
39. *Gravesend Town Records, V. 2, p. 100 copy, 193 original.*

40. Denton, Daniel A. *Brief Description of New York*, *Proc. S. I. Assn. Arts & Sciences* V. 6, p. 39.
41. *Col. Documents* V. 2, p.681. *Proc. S. I. Assn. Arts & Sciences* V.6, p. 40.
42. *Danckaerts, Jasper, Journal of 1679-80*, p. 72. *Proc. S. I. Assn. Arts & Sciences*, V. 6, p. 40.
43. *Land Papers* V. 1, p. 65.
44. Records 1680-1760 Richmond County, Copy in Stillwell's *Historical Miscellany*, V. 1, see pp. 1-7.
45. Records 1680-1760 Richmond County, Stillwell's *Historical Miscellany*, V. 1, p. 17.
46. *Minutes of the Common Council of the City of New York 1675-1776*, V. 1, p. 4, Clute's *Annals of Staten Island* p. 56.
47. *Kings County Court and Road Records*, V. 2, 1668 to 1766, in Hall of Records, Brooklyn It contains the records of the Court of Sessions of the West Reding of Yorkshire held at Gravesend, Long Island.
48. *Court and Road Records Kings County*, V. 2, p.187 copy, 328 original.
49. *Colonial Laws of New York*, V.1, p. 121, 125. *Proc. S. I. Assn. Arts & Sciences*, V.6, p.54.
50. This volume was referred to by Anthon in 1850-51, and by Clute in 1877, but since that time until now it has been apparently overlooked.
51. Records of the Court of Sessions and Common Pleas 1710-1743 at County Clerk's Office, Richmond. *S. I. Assn. Arts & Sciences Proc.* V. 6, p. 56.
52. This French map is in *Land Papers*, V. 1 p. 99. A photographic copy is in the possession of the S. I. Assn. Arts & Sciences.
53. Records 1680-1760 Richmond County. Stillwell's *Historical Miscellany* V. 1, pp. 1-17.
54. Liber B of deeds p. 254.
55. Records 1680-1760 Richmond County. Stillwell's *Historical Miscellany* V. 1, p. 56.
56. Records 1680-1760 Richmond County. Stillwell's *Historical Miscellany* V. 1, p. 56
57. Records 1680-1760 Richmond County. Stillwell's *Historical Miscellany* V. 1, p. 38.
58. Chapter 64 of the *Laws of 1788*. *New York State Laws* 8th - 11th Sessions 1785-1788, Albany, 1886.

## THE HUGUENOTS—THE FIRST SETTLERS IN THE PROVINCE OF NEW YORK<sup>1</sup>

It has been generally supposed that the Dutch were the only settlers in New York entitled to very much consideration at the hands of the historians, but the Huguenots were first in the field and formed a very important element both in numbers and influence.

The history of the Huguenots in the Province of New York began in 1622 when certain Walloons petitioned the King of England for permission to settle in Virginia. The petition was not granted. About two months later certain Walloons, probably the same persons, petitioned the States General of Holland for permission to settle in New Netherland and the request was granted.

In the spring of 1623 the West India Company equipped a vessel, called the "New Netherlands," of which Cornelius Jacobs was skipper, with thirty families, mostly Walloons. They sailed by way of the Canaries and reached New Amsterdam where they became the first permanent settlers. The first white child born in the Province was of Huguenot parentage.

There were in all in the Province of New York four Huguenot communities and four churches all organized previous to 1700. They were located as follows: one in New Amsterdam, one on Staten Island near Richmond, one at New Paltz and one at New Rochelle.

The church at New York has continued until the present day. Its records have been translated and printed in book form. The church on Staten Island was organized at an early date, flourished for a long time and enjoyed the administration of Rev. David Bonrepos; but the church organization, the church records and the church building are all gone; the tombstones in the grave yard long remained but they too are gone now.

---

<sup>1</sup>An address delivered at the Bear Mountain meeting of the New York State Historical Association, October 6, 1920.

At New Paltz the church organization has always remained and the records have been translated and printed in book form; the Dutch language did not supersede the French until about three quarters of a century after the settlement, and the church at about that time became affiliated with the Dutch churches of the surrounding country.

At New Rochelle the records have been translated and transcribed but not yet published in book form.

I shall not enter into any extended account of the Huguenot settlements except that at New Paltz.

I have less knowledge of the others though I have ascertained what I could concerning New Rochelle from Bolton's History, and I have twice visited Staten Island in search of historical matter. But although the Staten Island Huguenots were on the ground at an early date and long maintained a church, their history has never been and never can be written because the church records are lost and other sources of information furnish but little. At New Rochelle, named for the Huguenot stronghold in France, much interest has been shown of late years and considerable historical matter is available. In New York the French and Dutch soon intermarried and became so intertwined that no attempt has been made, so far as I know, to write up the Huguenots as a class by themselves.

But of the Huguenot Settlement at New Paltz I am quite sure that more of interest can be said and written than of any other settlement in the Province of New York.

The Patent granted to the twelve men who settled at New Paltz comprised about 40,000 acres and had a frontage of about twelve miles on the Hudson. The rock which formed the north-east boundary mark of the Patent, projecting into the River on Judge Alton B. Parker's estate in Esopus, near Pell's Island, is as important a landmark as there is in the Valley of the Hudson. The events which led up to the settlement of New Paltz were of thrilling interest. The settlement was the only one of Huguenots in the state in which the original stock was not overwhelmed by a crowd of newcomers of other nationalities. Finally, there is no place in the state in which the lore of the early settlers has been so well preserved, both by tradition and by document. Until the present generation a great portion of the farms and the old

houses on Huguenot Street remained in the families of the original settlers. Of late years this has ceased to be the case to a considerable extent. Still, I am proud to be the owner of a house which has come down in the family since about 1740, and of forty acres of land which has been in the family over 200 years.

Several years ago the State Historical Society held a meeting at Kingston and a large number of its members visited New Paltz. But I think that most of those here present never visited New Paltz and know but little concerning its history.

One of the most interesting things connected with the history of New Paltz was the emigration in the early days to New Jersey, to Pennsylvania, to Catskill, to Dutchess County and to Staten Island. The descendants of the people who left New Paltz two centuries ago have shown quite as great an interest in the history of the place as those whose ancestors have always lived here.

Twenty-five years ago the New Paltz Huguenot, Patriotic, Historical and Monumental Society was organized, of which I had the honor for seventeen years to be the president. The task was undertaken of raising funds for the erection of a Boulder Monument to the early settlers, and of purchasing one of the old houses to be used not only as a memorial, but as a museum for relics, curios and old documents. The work was carried through successfully and you are all invited to visit New Paltz and to inspect these curios, as well as the old houses. A great part of the contributions came from people in far distant parts of our country, whose ancestors left New Paltz two centuries ago.

I have had correspondence in relation to their New Paltz ancestry with many people in distant parts of our country who were glad to trace back to the little Huguenot village on the Wallkill.

There is no history so interesting to people in general as the history of their ancestors. The present generation has seen a great awakening in this respect on account of the formation of patriotic and historical societies, such as the Daughters of the Revolution, the Holland Society, etc. People who formerly could not trace back farther than their grandfathers can now trace their line back to the Revolution or to the first settlement. But many can not do so on account of the loss of church or civil records.

The history of most places in our state is concerned primarily with the epoch of the Revolution and with Indian fighting at an earlier date. But at New Paltz the most interesting portion of our history goes back to the generations preceding the Revolution, and there was no fighting with the Indians.

New Paltz was settled in 1678 by Louis DuBois and his associates, eleven in all, under a patent granted by Edmond Andros, Colonial Governor of New York, under Charles II, King of England. The land had been purchased of the Indians a few months previously. The original papers relating to the matter, as well as all the records of the church dating back to its organization in 1683 are still in existence, and for New Paltz we make the claim that in the interest and value of its old documents it surpasses all the other old settlements in the state. We make the same claim in regard to the old houses on Huguenot Street. Come to New Paltz and we will show you.

Fleeing to this country as they did on account of religious persecution, it was natural that the church should be a very important factor in the life of the community. And accordingly we find a church organized in 1683, only a few years after the date of the settlement. The only churches organized in the present State of New York at an earlier date were those at New York, Albany and Kingston. The New Paltz church records, still in existence, are in French for about seventy years, then in Dutch for about fifty years and since 1800 in English. This is the only church in the country in which the records are in three languages. The present brick church building erected in 1839 is the third which has served the purpose. The first stone church was built in 1717, and the second, just before the Revolutionary war. In the very early days before 1700 there were two Huguenot pastors, Rev. Pierre Daille, and afterwards, Rev. David Bonrepos, who visited New Paltz occasionally.

Next to the church, the school and education occupied an important place in the minds of the early settlers. In the days before 1700 when the French language was spoken, two teachers are noted, Jean Cottin and Jean Tebbenin. Neither of these teachers left descendants. Jean Cottin afterwards moved to Kingston, long carried on the mercantile business there, and when he died left a considerable portion of his estate to the King-



ston Church. Jean Tebbenin was a poor man, and had not much property to dispose of, but in his will, made in 1730, he gave his little property to the church here, with the special provision that if the Dutch language should supersede the French, his French Bible should be sold and the proceeds given to the poor.

One of the most interesting papers that have come to light, is a deed of gift in 1689 from the New Paltz people to Jean Cottin, their schoolmaster, of a house and lot. This deed of gift shows that they highly prized education and that they were kind to their schoolmaster.

This deed of gift, of which I have a copy in French made in 1701, not only gives to Jean Cottin a house and a lot but likewise pasturage for a mare and a colt and a cow and calf and the privilege of cutting wood for his use. It also contains the remarkable proviso that if Cottin desires to sell the house and lot it must be to some one of good life and manners to whom they all agree. And he shall have the preference who is "approved without limit."

Perhaps one reason why New Paltz always grew so slowly was that its people would not dispose of their land to anyone unless they were sure he was of good life and manners.

This deed of gift contains another remarkable provision, as follows: "We are not obliged to keep the same Cottin for school master longer than we find proper." Evidently these Patentees, although they felt very friendly to their schoolmaster, wanted it understood that they were not bound to him perpetually.

The final paragraph of the deed of gift, preceding the signatures, says: "On condition that the said house shall be subject to the statute labor of the village."

In this deed of gift it had been previously stated that "We, the proprietors, at the same time are ready for the apportionment and enlargement of our cottages." It is evident that at this date, 1689, then eleven years after the settlement, the Patentees were about to enlarge their little cottages, built at the outset, and that all the work was to be done by the united "statute labor" of the village.

The term Huguenot is now universally applied to denote the French Protestant Church, but I do not find the word Huguenot used at all in the old documents. The French settlers at New Paltz were called Walloons. The Church was called the Church of the Walloons. Sometimes it was called the French Church. Louis DuBois, the leader of the band, was called, Louis the Walloon. The first settlers on Manhattan Island were called Walloons. And in the Amsterdam Correspondence they were not called Huguenots but Walloons. The word Huguenot is not used at all in any of the old papers as applied to the French Protestant refugees in this Province.

It was but a small band of Huguenots that settled at New Paltz. Twelve persons were named in the Patent, but one of the number remained in Hurley. The settlement was not increased to any extent for a long period by further emigration of Huguenots or of other nationalities. However, it was one of the earliest Huguenot settlements in America and ten years older than that at New Rochelle. There were over ten thousand Huguenots who located at South Carolina where their most important settlements were situated, but there were Huguenots in New Paltz before they made any permanent settlement in South Carolina. In Virginia about seven hundred Huguenots located, but their settlement was about twenty years after that at New Paltz.

Next to the old houses at New Paltz, the most interesting place in the country around, from a historical point of view, is the site of the New Indian Fort at Shawangunk. At this spot there was a battle with the Indians when their fort was taken. The place is fourteen miles southwest from our village. This was the only real battle ever fought in Ulster County. Here most of the women and children that were captured by the savages at Kingston in 1663 were rescued.

There is no more thrilling story in the history of the early settlements in America, than the narrative of the events that led up to the settlement of New Paltz.

The story is as follows:

The leader of the New Paltz band of Huguenots was Louis DuBois. He was from near Lille in France, had fled on account of his religion to Manheim, and thence, about 1660, to New

York, bringing with him his wife and two little boys and locating at Hurley near Kingston.

A few years before, Kingston had had a bloody war with the neighboring Indians. There had been no hostilities of late, but the Savages had harbored deep resentment on account of the action of Peter Stuyvesant, the last Dutch Governor of the Province, who had sent certain of the Indian chiefs to Curaco and sold them there as slaves. Like a stroke of lightning from a cloudless sky came the Indian blow for revenge. It was in June 1663 that the Indians made a sudden and murderous attack while the men were at work in the fields. The Savages burned Hurley and a part of Kingston, killed 24, and carried away 45 women and children as prisoners, among them the wife and three children of Louis DuBois.

No one knew where the captives were in the unexplored wilderness.

The Kingston people made application for help to Peter Stuyvesant, the Dutch Governor. He sent an expedition under command of Captain Creiger. After some delay and various unsuccessful expeditions into the pathless wilderness in search of the captives they marched up the Rondout Valley to an Indian fort near Kerhonkson, but found it abandoned.

Then came the news that the Indians were building a new fort near Shawangunk, about 30 miles from Kingston in the valley of the Wallkill.

The Dutch soldiers with citizens from Kingston and Hurley made a quick march, took the Indians by surprise, killed their chief and a number of warriors and rescued most of the captives including the wife and children of Louis DuBois.

The tradition which is dear to the Huguenot heart of New Paltz, is that when the Dutch soldiers made their sudden attack upon the Indian stronghold, the Indians were about to burn the wife of Louis DuBois at the stake. In view of impending death by torture, she commenced to sing the hymn of the Babylonian Captives as found in Marot's Hymn book. The Red Men, pleased with the song, urged her by signs to continue. While she was doing so her husband with the rescuing party of Dutch soldiers arrived, and saved her from a horrible death.

Louis DuBois on his return from this expedition with rescued wife and children, had ample opportunity to notice the extended lowlands along the Wallkill where New Paltz is now located, though it was not until fourteen years afterwards that he and his associates purchased the tract from the Indians.

From the very first settlement at New Paltz there was a swarming out of the young men and women in each generation to places far and near. Abraham Freer, son of Hugo Freer the Patentee, about 1723 went to Rhinebeck and his children scattered widely. Benjamin Hasbrouck, son of Abraham Hasbrouck the Patentee, located near Hopewell, in Dutchess County, where his stone house is still standing. Miss Mary Haldane is one of his descendants. Abraham DuBois, son of Abram DuBois the Patentee, left New Paltz and located in Somerset County, New Jersey. In the next generation and in each and every generation this emigration continued. The descendants of the present day of all these men have shown great interest in the history of New Paltz.

A century ago a great portion of the most prominent citizens of Kingston, Poughkeepsie and Newburgh bore New Paltz names and were of New Paltz ancestry. In Poughkeepsie the Freers were the most numerous family in the place a century and a quarter ago. In Kingston it will hardly be questioned that the Hasbroucks of New Paltz ancestry were the most prominent citizens for a long period. But although some of the young men and young women left New Paltz to find a home elsewhere, there were enough who remained to keep full possession of the old houses and farms.

The Huguenots who settled New Paltz, though they had been forced by cruel persecution to leave their own country and had been residents of Germany for some time, had apparently remained a distinct people not learning to speak the German tongue. Neither, apparently, had there been any ardent friendship with the Dutch at Kingston. None of the Patentees and not many of their children residing in New Paltz intermarried with the Dutch. From all the evidence in our possession it would seem that they all lived in Hurley, rather than in Kingston, before coming to New Paltz. Louis DuBois had much trouble with the Kingston people. They complained to the authorities in New York that he sold liquor to the Indians. But he was able to fight his own battles.

There was probably no especial dislike for the Dutch but the Frenchmen preferred to come to New Paltz and form a community by themselves.

In the Amsterdam Correspondence appears a communication sent by the church at New Paltz in 1751 to the Classis of Amsterdam asking for a minister for New Paltz and Shawangunk, and setting forth at great length and with much force the attempt made by the Kingston Church to deprive New Paltz of its church organization and compel it to become part of the Kingston Church for the purpose as stated of supplying "a permanent requisite for its minister." This letter states, moreover, that the church services had been altogether in the French language until about 1727, forty years after the grant of the Patent, when services had begun to be held afternoons in the Dutch language; moreover, that the services had been conducted in the French language by French ministers whenever they could be had, the last being in 1739, by Rev. Mr. Moulinars, pastor of the French Church at New Rochelle.

The most recent documents we find in the French language are the wills in 1729 of Jean Tebenin, the schoolmaster, and Daniel DuBois. In some families the use of the French language was no doubt continued until a much later date. A story related by my father is, that when his grandfather, Daniel LeFevre, and his two brothers were living in the three stone houses on the banks of the Wallkill at Bontecoe about 1760, a child, sent from one family to another to borrow some article, asked for it in the Dutch language, but was sternly told to go back home and learn to ask for it in French.

When I am telling this story which I have been telling you I never know when to end. I like to ride my hobby so well that I do not stop to think that others may be getting tired. I shall close by saying that if you come to New Paltz you will find that the half has not been told you.

RALPH LEFEVRE

## OBITUARIES

BY GEORGE A. INGALLS

CHARLES KNOX COLE died the 27th of February, 1920, at Pasadena, California. He was born April 5, 1852, at Plainfield, Illinois. Charles Nelson Cole and Louisa Brainerd Cole were his father and mother.

After graduation from Lincoln University he attended Miami Medical College, Cincinnati, from which he received his degree of M. D. in 1879. He was a postgraduate student in the hospitals of Chicago, New York, London, Paris, Berlin, and Vienna. He took up the practice of his profession in Helena, Montana, and at once gained first rank. He became president of the Medical Association of Montana, president of the Board of Medical Examiners of Montana, president of the American Academy of Railway Surgeons.

Even during the busiest years of his medical practice he took an active part in public affairs. Among offices which he filled with distinction were the presidency of the State Senate, the presidency of the City Council of Helena, the presidency of the Helena Chamber of Commerce. His business interests in Montana included banking, mining and real estate.

One of his friends George H. F. Schrader of A. Schrader's Son, Inc., manufacturers on a large scale of brass goods and diving apparatus in Brooklyn, persuaded Dr. Cole to establish a permanent residence in New York City. Later Dr. Cole became a resident of Chelsea-on-the-Hudson. He was president of A. Schrader's Son, Inc., from 1914 until his death.

Dr. Cole held membership in the Montana Club, the Old Colony Club, the Aero Club of America, the New York State Historical Association. He was a founder and director of the Rocky Mountain Club. Among fraternal organizations in which he held membership were the Elks, Masons, Odd Fellows, Knights of Pythias, Ancient Order of United Workmen.

He married Harriet, daughter of Mr. and Mrs. P. G. Gillett of Jacksonville, Illinois, in 1881. They had two children, who with his wife survive him.

SMITH MEAD WEED, who died June 7, 1920, at Valcour, was born July 26, 1833, at Belmont, New York. He was a son of Roswell A. Weed and Sarah Mead Weed. In 1839 his parents returned to Plattsburgh to live. For the remaining eighty-one years of his life Plattsburgh was the home of Smith Weed. He was buried in the family plot in Riverside Cemetery, Plattsburgh.

Smith Weed was educated in the Plattsburgh public schools and the Plattsburgh Academy. Thereafter his father placed him as clerk in a general store in Plattsburgh. He passed three years in this position and two years in a similar position in Boston. From early boyhood the law was the career of his choice. His father was opposed to any but a mercantile career for his son.

Upon reaching his majority Smith Weed began the study of law in the office of Judge Beckwith in Plattsburgh. He was admitted to the bar in 1856. Then he entered the Harvard Law School from which he was graduated in 1857 with high rank in his class. After graduation he practiced law in Plattsburgh as a partner of Judge Beckwith and Henry Johnson. Mr. Weed's legal practice was varied and associated with enterprises of the first magnitude. In 1868 he was senior counsel for the prosecution at the trial under articles of impeachment of Robert C. Dorn, canal commissioner. The growth of his practice necessitated the maintenance of an office in New York City, but the opportunities which that city offers a lawyer of his ability did not induce him to give up his home in Plattsburgh.

He was elected president of the Village of Plattsburgh in 1865 and reelected for several years. He was delegate-at-large from the fourth judicial district in the constitutional convention of 1867. He was a member of the assembly in 1865-1867 inclusive, and in 1871-1874 inclusive. He energetically supported the free school act of 1867 whereby "rate-bills" were abolished.

He was a stanch Democrat; the constituency from which he was elected to the assembly was strongly Republican. Party lines were erased when Mr. Weed was a candidate. In 1887 he received the unanimous vote of the Democrats in the legislature for the

United States senatorship. He was delegate to the national conventions of his party in 1876, 1880, 1884. As a personal friend of Samuel J. Tilden, candidate of the Democratic party for the presidency in 1876, he was active in the management of the campaign.

Mr. Weed drafted articles of association, secured a grant of \$250,000 by the legislature and furthered subscriptions to bonds in Clinton and Essex counties, which resulted in establishing direct railroad communication between New York and Montreal through Plattsburgh in November 1874. In 1867 Mr. Weed bought the mines at Lyon Mountain. He brought about the building of the Chateaugay railroad from Plattsburgh to Lake Placid. In 1881 he consolidated the Chateaugay Ore and Iron Companies and was first president of the consolidation. He was vice-president and member of the executive board of the Nicaragua Canal Company: president of the Santo Domingo Improvement Company.

On lands which he had bought he laid out and opened numerous thoroughfares in Plattsburgh. Part of a lot which he had bought east of the Saranac River, he sold to a nail factory with an agreement that the factory owners should build a dam and he be part owner. Mr. Weed bought a large tract of land at Bluff Point for a residence. After he had sold a one-half interest in the tract to the Delaware and Hudson Company, the company built Hotel Champlain at Bluff Point. Then he interested Robert Olyphant in bringing about the location of the Catholic Summer School at Plattsburgh.

During the building of Hotel Champlain, Col. LeGrand B. Cannon of Burlington, Vt., Senator Proctor of Rutland, Vt., then secretary of war, Lieutenant General Scofield, with others, while on a visit of inspection were guests of Mr. Weed at lunch. He then secured their support of a bill providing for the regimental post which was thereafter established at Plattsburgh.

In 1909 Mr. Weed was an important factor in the celebration of the tercentenary of the discovery of Lake Champlain and entertained at luncheon in his home eighty-three guests, among whom were President Taft, the ambassadors of France and Great Britain, members of the cabinet, the governors of New York and Vermont, Cardinal Gibbons and prominent officials of Canada.



Mr. Weed married Caroline Leslie Standish, September 6, 1859. She died January 4, 1886. Of their four children, two daughters only survive their parents.

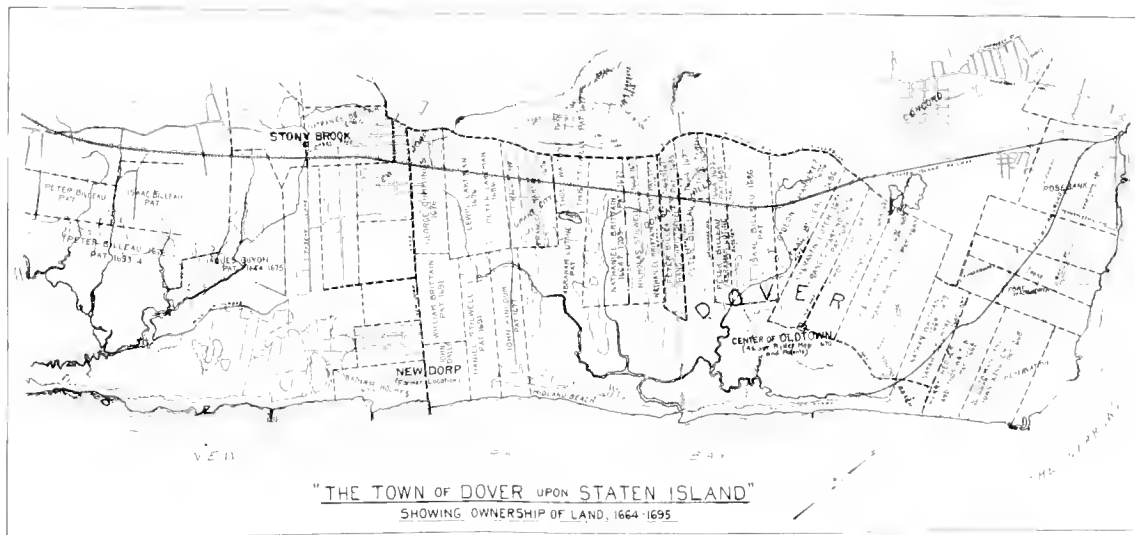
The *Plattsburgh Daily Press* in its obituary article says: "In his business career Mr. Weed accumulated large sums of money but not a dollar of it was ever hoarded. What he had belonged to his neighbor as much as to himself. The latch-string was always out on the door of Smith M. Weed and rich and poor were received alike."

ROBERT R. LAW, who died in the village of Cambridge, Washington county, October 9, 1920, was born in the town of Jackson, of the same county, New York, November 30, 1854. His parents were George and Margaret Scrimger Law. He was born on a farm which his paternal great-grandfather, who had come from Belfast, Ireland, bought in 1789, and reclaimed from the wilderness. Through Elizabeth Gilmore, wife of his grandfather, Robert R. Law, he was descended from George Gilmore, captain of Cambridge Company, Sixteenth Albany Militia, in the War for Independence.

When he was twelve years old his family moved from the home farm to the village of Cambridge. His schooling thereafter was received at Washington Academy, Cambridge. In 1873 he began learning the printer's trade in the office of the *Washington County Post*. He became editor, manager and part owner, and filled every position "from devil up" before his connection with the newspaper ended in 1889.

When he was about twenty years old he began the study of stenography at home without a teacher. About five years later he did his first reporting. January 1, 1887, he was appointed stenographer of the grand juries of Washington County. In 1888, he was appointed official court stenographer of the fourth judicial district of the State of New York. He was a member of the New York State Stenographers' Association and its president in 1896-1897.

Three years after his appointment as official court stenographer he was admitted to the bar. Mr. Law was a favorite among his brethren of the bar as a referee. Justice Borst of the Supreme Court, in a statement which he made upon announcing adjournment of a term of court out of respect to the memory of Mr. Law, said: "Frequently he was selected as a referee because of his



quotation has already been made, said: "But in addition to his fine talents and business qualifications I considered him one of the purest and best men I have ever met."

ELWYN SEELYE died at Hastings-on-Hudson, October 14, 1920. He was born October 27, 1848. As a charter member of this Association he was one of its staunchest supporters. The "Report of Secretary" in Volume I of the annuals of the New York State Historical Association opens with the following statement: "It may not be uninteresting to review in a few words the origin of this organization. In the summer of 1898, Mr. Elwyn Seelye\*\*\*\*called a few gentlemen together at the Fort William Henry Hotel to consider the formation of an historical society. The project was well received, other meetings were held, the scope of the movement enlarged, and a State society determined upon."

His family was from New England and was prominent in the Indian wars of the New England colonies. His great-grandfather, Nehemiah Seelye, was one of the patentees of Queensbury, in Warren county, and an officer in the French and Indian War and the War for Independence. Reuben Seelye, grandfather of Elwyn, was a lumberman, who cleared many farms, among which are some of the best known in Queensbury. Reuben Seelye, 2nd, holder of many local offices, was the father of Elwyn Seelye; Rizpah Matilda, daughter of Calvin Haskins, a physician who practiced in Queensbury, was his mother. Her maternal grandfather Fields was an officer at the Battle of Lexington.

In 1864, before Elwyn had reached his sixteenth birthday he attempted to enlist as a Union soldier. After repeated rejection by officers who knew his father and his age, he went to Fort Ann and secured acceptance. He ran away from home to Albany and entered the 14th New York Heavy Artillery. His regiment reached the front just after the fall of Petersburg. While on duty in North Carolina he was thrown from the top of a freight car and received an injury of the spine from which he never fully recovered.

He returned from the war to his father's farm on the Bay Road, which he managed until some three years after his marriage. At a later period he took building contracts at Lake George and dealt in real estate.

In 1877 Mr. Seelye married Elizabeth, eldest daughter of Edward Eggleston, the author. They lived at Dunham's Bay

from 1881 to 1895 throughout the year and passed the winters of 1895-98 in the village of Caldwell. During that time Mr. Seelye became deeply interested in the marking and preservation of the site of the Battle of Lake George. After the purchase of the battle ground by the State he became its first custodian. Ill health at last compelled his resignation.

In the fall of 1898 Mr. Seelye began to reside in Ithaca during term time to secure the advantages of a university town for his children. He was a member of the Town and Gown Club and was one of a congenial coterie selfnamed the "Daddy's Club" He continued to reside in Ithaca during term time until June 1909, when he returned to Dunham's Bay. After 1910 he spent his winters at New York and elsewhere and his summers at Dunham's Bay.

Mr. Seelye was the father of six children. His wife and four of them survive him.

CHARLES ERNEST ACKER died at his home in Ossining, New York, October 18, 1920. He was born at Bourbon, Indiana, March 19, 1868, and was the son of William James Acker, a manufacturer, and Mercia Grant Acker. The Acker family came from Holland and settled in New Amsterdam. Charles Ernest Acker was married to Alice Reynolds Beal of New York. April 26, 1892. He lived in Niagara Falls until 1907, when he went to New York City and then to Ossining. His wife and six children survive him.

Mr. Acker was graduated from Cornell University with the degree of Ph. B. in 1888. At one time he was an officer of the Northwestern Alumni Association of Cornell University at Chicago, and later of the Cornell Alumni Association of Buffalo. He was engaged in electrical engineering in Chicago from 1888 to 1893. He was the originator of the Acker process of manufacture of caustic soda by electrolysis of molten salt and built the works of the Acker Process Company at Niagara Falls. He also originated processes for the manufacture of tetrachloride of tin and carbon tetrachloride and was the first in America to manufacture the latter. He was granted about fifty patents by the United States and foreign countries for invention of chemical and electrochemical processes. The Elliott-Cresson gold medal of the Franklin Institute of Philadelphia and other medals were awarded him in recognition of his achievements.

He was a member of the American Electro-Chemical Society and a director from 1905 to 1910; a member of the American Institute of Electrical Engineers, the American Chemical Society; of the Society of Arts, Paraday Society and Society of Chemical Industry, London. He was one of the National Committee for the Celebration of the One Hundredth Anniversary of Peace among English Speaking Peoples, 1814-1914; was a director of the Westchester County Bureau of Municipal Research, and treasurer of Trinity Church, Ossining.

CHARLES MASON DOW died on December 10, 1920, at his home in Jamestown. In private life Mr. Dow was a banker and financier. He was in a way to the manner bred. The son of Albert Gallatin and Lydia Mason Dow, he was born in Randolph, New York, August 1, 1854. He attended the local academy there, went for two years to Oberlin College and then studied law for three years. Preferring a business career, he became a member of the banking firm of A. G. Dow and Son of Randolph and later of Dow and Company of Bradford, Pennsylvania. In 1888 he went to Jamestown and established the Jamestown National Bank, which was later merged with the Chautauqua County Bank, under the name of the National Chautauqua County Bank, of which he became president — a position which he held until his death. In 1899 he was elected vice president of the Title Guarantee and Trust Company of New York and devoted himself to that institution for some years.

Always delighting in the natural beauty of forest and stream, he early became identified with that group of men of which Andrew H. Green was the center. In 1898 he was made a commissioner of the State Reservation at Niagara and from 1903 to 1914 was president of the Commission. During all those years and even after 1914, when his official connection with the commission ceased, his heart and soul were wrapped up in planning for the development and beautification of the Reservation.

For many years a friend of William P. Letchworth, he was a potent factor in influencing that great philanthropist in 1907 to donate to the State as a park, the lands about the Upper Falls of the Genesee river. Mr. Dow became the chairman of the committee having the park in charge and he immediately set to work with his characteristic energy, planning and thoroughness, not

only to preserve the park as the gem of beauty which it was by nature, but also to create there a forest arboretum. He was the founder of the park system of his home city of Jamestown and for many years served as president of its Park Commission. He was vice-president of the New York State Forestry Association, trustee of the Association for the Preservation of the Adirondacks, trustee of the American Scenic and Historic Preservation Society, director of the National Conservation Association and member of many other societies and associations that have similar interests. For his conspicuous services in the field of forestry and in connection with the Niagara Reservation, he was given the degree of doctor of laws from Bethany College in 1914 and from Niagara University in 1915.

He was elected from the fifty-first senatorial district as a delegate to the State Constitutional Convention of 1915, and Elihu Root, the chairman of the convention, selected Mr. Dow as the chairman of the Committee on Conservation.

It was not alone in the field of Nature that he was active. In 1917 he was elected president of the Chautauqua County Historical Society and was made the first vice-president of the New York State Historical Association in 1919.

When the United States became involved in the World War, he took his share of the burdens and served as Federal Fuel Administrator for Chautauqua county, County Director of the Liberty Loan Campaigns, and as a member of the Federal Milk Commission.

In the midst of his activities as a banker and financier, and as an active promoter of the preservation of the forests and of the scenic beauties of the State, Mr. Dow was able to find time to write articles for various publications and to get together material for his books: "*A Century of Finance and Commerce*;" "*A History of the State Reservation at Niagara*;" and the "*Anthology and Bibliography of Niagara Falls*."

In 1876 Mr. Dow married Eleanor Jones. They had three children, two of whom survive. Mrs Dow died within a short time after her husband.

## REVIEWS OF BOOKS

*A History of the Adirondacks.* By ALFRED L. DONALDSON.  
(New York: Century Company. 1921. 2 volumes. Pp. viii,  
383 and 383. Illustrations and maps.)

The publishers proclaim this to be a complete history of the Adirondacks. The author's statement is much more modest: "Only the most salient episodes of Adirondack history have been chosen for these pages, and their slant of emphasis is frankly toward the early days and the pioneers. The narrative portion of the work aims to be broadly comprehensive without attempting to be minutely exhaustive, and to this end a policy of omission and condensation has been carefully pursued."

Beginning with days of occupation by the Indians and their first contact with the whites when Champlain came down from New France, the author gives the broad outline of the history of this section of the state with chapters on the great "tracts" bought by land speculators after the Revolution, the iron-ore discoveries, and the development of the region as a tourist resort, which may be dated from 1869, the date of "Adventures in the Wilderness" by "Adirondack Murray". The growth of Saranac is told with most appreciative sketches of Dr. Trudeau and Robert Louis Stevenson. Paul Smith and other old settlers are recalled; the early guides, Old Mountain Phelps, Sabattis, and others are entertainingly presented; and John Brown's venture at North Elba receives full mention.

Other chapters deal with the early stage routes and drivers, railroads, lumbering and the various clubs of the mountains. Special note should be made of a chapter on the old military roads, a subject on which correct information is much scattered and which has been popularly misunderstood. In an appendix is given the most complete bibliography of Adirondack literature which has been printed. The book is well illustrated with early and present day views and pictures of individuals and has a full index.

Written by a man who was banished to the woods because of his health and who has spent nearly ten years in its compilation, this work is evidently a labor of love; but it is more than that for it is based on much garnering and sifting of "eye-witness" material that would have been forever lost in a few years. The personal is to the front, not the formal historical, and the result is a book that should appeal to all who love the Adirondacks and are interested in their past.

PETER NELSON

*Three Years with the Adirondack Regiment.* 118th New York Volunteers Infantry. By JOHN L. CUNNINGHAM. (Privately printed. 1920. Pp. vi., 286. Illustrations.)

This volume now tells the story of one of the few New York regiments in the Civil War which up to the present have had nothing written about them. Mr. Cunningham was a major of the unit and was afterwards made brevet lieutenant colonel. Even though Colonel Cunningham in his "Excusatory" says that he makes no pretense to literary merit, the book is very readable. It is based on notes and diaries made at the time and is told in chronological order.

The pictures of camp life it gives are of present moment because of the contrast they form with some of the stories which are coming out about the present World War. Love letters from home (p. 109) were waited for in those days as keenly as in the recent war and the slacker who stayed at home was looked on with equal contempt.

Colonel Cunningham's comment on those who were criticizing the delays and hesitancy of a movement about whose purpose and intent they knew nothing should be read by some of the writers of the muck-raking variety about our recent war. In fact no better lesson could be had than to read this volume in conjunction with some of those which have been written on the world war.

A novel comparison is to compare the pictures of the men in this volume with the photographs of men who served in France and also do the same thing with the rosters. You go over page after page of the latter and rarely discover a foreign name. The ages of the men also disprove that too commonly told tale that



the Civil War was fought by boys. A rough computation here would seem to give the results arrived at before that the average age was somewhere in the vicinity of twenty-six.

JAMES SULLIVAN

*With the Yanks in France.* A Story of America in France. By VINCENT F. SULLIVAN. (New York: The Author, 44 Broad Street. Pp. 137.)

This narrative is based on Wagoner Sullivan's diary. It has a decided advantage over that form of writing in that the author with his diary before him has been able to expand his notes into a very interesting and readable narrative from the time he enlists to his return home.

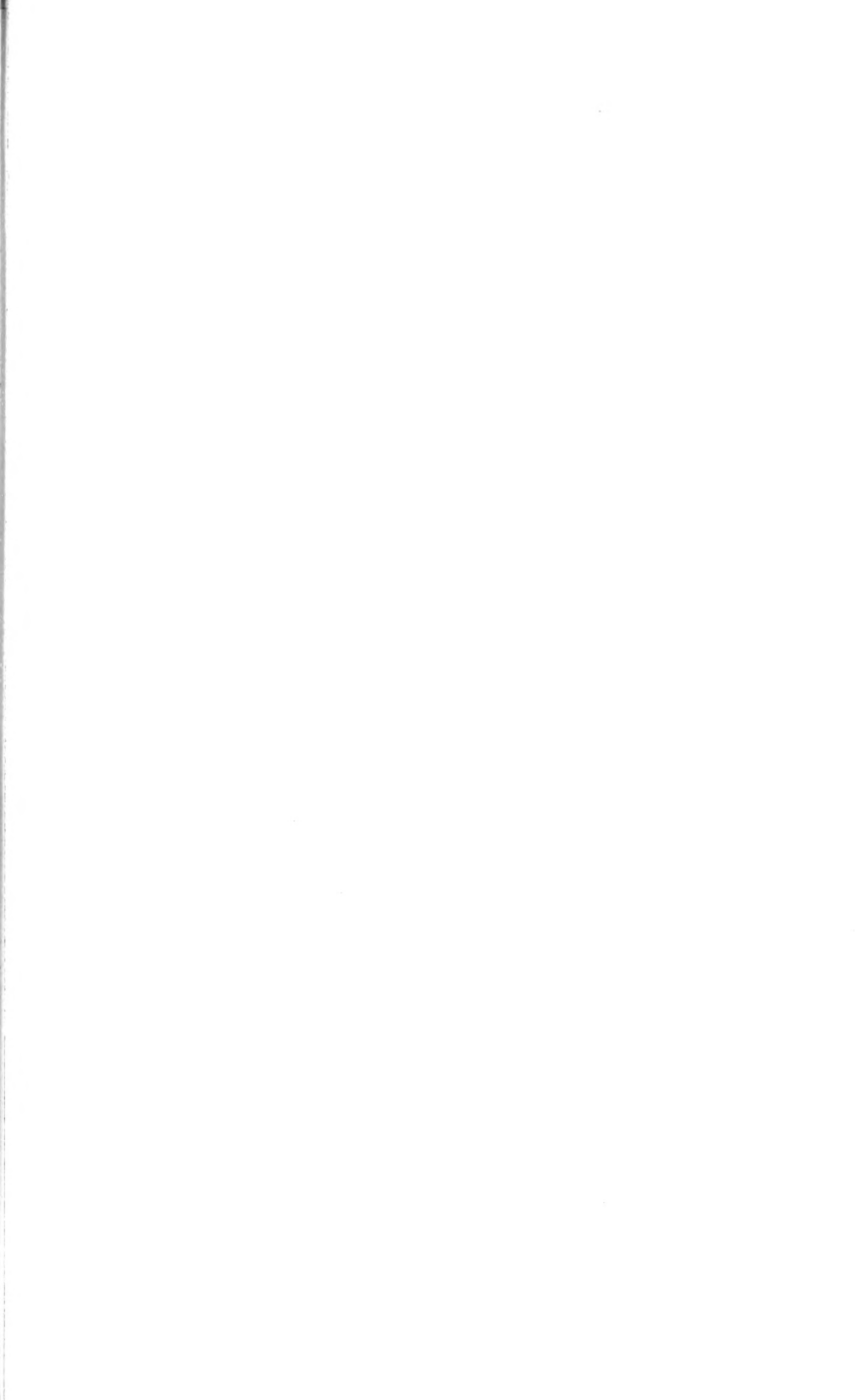
As a wagoner in the 58th Artillery of the C. A. C., (made up largely of New York men) he was up and down a great deal of the fighting front in France, serving for first one division and then another. The story is vividly and simply told. Thousands of others would tell the same tale had they been as thoughtful as the author in keeping that story in form and as skillful as he in telling it. It is well to read a book like this which represents what our boys did so willingly and cheerfully in the war, in comparison with those books recently published which would give an impression that our army was made up of a group of cowardly, neurasthenic perverts.

*American Catholics in the War*, National Catholic War Council, 1917-1921. By MICHAEL WILLIAMS. (New York: The Macmillan Company. 1921. Pp. x, 467.)

The first five chapters of this work are devoted to a history of the Catholic Church in the United States and the part that it has played in the previous wars in which that country has been involved. The balance of the book chapters VI - IX is occupied with a story of the organization of the National Catholic War Council and its activities during the World War. It was through this group that all organized work done by the Catholics during the war was carried on. Chaplains were sent abroad, the social life of soldiers cared for and assistance given in reconstruction.

Not the least interesting chapters are those which close the work on work done by the Catholic women at home and abroad.

Many New Yorkers participated in this work, but it is difficult to find their names because the volume lacks an index. Furthermore New York State Catholics did so much work that it is to be hoped that a special volume on that state may be forthcoming in the near future.





View from the Dining Room Windows in Bear Mountain Inn.

## NOTES AND QUERIES

### HISTORICAL SOCIETIES AND CLUBS

The Kings County Historical Society held its tenth annual dinner on April 9, 1921, at the Chamber of Commerce building in Brooklyn. The addresses of the evening were on preparedness in the army and the navy.

The Onondaga Historical Association at Syracuse has started a movement to interest the public in its collections by making them more easily accessible.

The Daughters of Columbia County Historical Society has announced "Lafayette's Visit to Hudson in 1824" and "Indian Lore of Columbia County" as the topics for the competitive essay contest in the high schools of the county.

The Oneida County Historical Society has been urging the State Highway Commissioner to construct a road so as to make the Oriskany Monument more easily accessible.

The Buffalo Historical Society has received from the estate of Harriet W. Grant the Civil War medals and relics of her husband, Dr. John H. Grant, who was a veteran of that war.

The Oneida County Historical Society has funds aggregating over \$28,000 and a building that cost in the vicinity of \$60,000. President De Angelis recently reported the appointment of a long list of committees.

The Livingston County Historical Society celebrated the 100th anniversary of the establishment of the county at its meeting on February 23, 1921. Dr. A. C. Parker delivered an address on Indian lore and representatives from other counties spoke.

On March 16, 1921, James H. Manning addressed the Albany Institute and Historical and Art Society on little known facts in the history of Albany.

The Huntington Historical Society held an exhibition which opened April 15, 1921, and which shows by maps and prints the development of Manhattan Island and Long Island from the Dutch and English beginnings to the present time.

The Arcadia Historical Society met in Newark on January 15 and March 15, 1921. A paper by Mrs. Garlock on the ancestry of the Peter Brown family and another by Mrs. Winspear on Mary Jemison, were read. Historical relics of the Brown family were shown. One of these was a chest belonging originally to Silas Brown in 1807. It contains many old papers.

The Rochester Historical Society held its meeting on March 29, 1921, in the Museum Building in Exposition Park. The Society in cooperation with the Rochester Chapter of the Sons of the American Revolution intends to erect a tablet in honor of Nathaniel Rochester, after whom the city was named. The Society has 776 members and has been the recipient of some 900 gifts during the year 1920. Mr. Wiltsie announced a gift of a rare map of New York State dated 1826 and bearing the title: "Canal Guide."

At the meeting of the Fort Oswego Chapter of the D. A. R. on April 14, 1921, Miss Harriet Stevens read a paper on the history of the town of Constantia and Mrs. Pratt read a paper by Miss Lathrop on the story of Frenchman's Island in Oneida. Mrs. Couch read a paper on Fort Brewerton and Mrs. Jordan gave a talk on Spy Island.

At a meeting of the Arcadia Historical Society of Newark, Mrs. A. D. Smith read a paper on "The Lily of the Mohawk," the story of an Indian girl, and Miss Ethel Williams read some letters from a collection of the brothers of her grandfather Taylor, 1830-1845.

"The Relation of the D. A. R. to Current History" was the subject of an address by Dr. James Sullivan before the Fort Stanwix Chapter of the Daughters of the American Revolution, on April 13, 1921.

In April the Madison County Historical Society gave an exhibition of pictures, maps and relics of Oneida.

On April 19, 1921, the Historical Society of the Town of Warwick held its annual meeting. An account of the Forester Pageant was given. Two prizes were given to high school students for historical essays. Former officers were reelected.

On May 5, 1921, at a meeting of the Pioneer Historical Society of Wyoming County, the State Historian, Dr. James Sullivan, addressed the members on the work of the local historians.

The Saratoga Chapter of the Daughters of the American Revolution at the meeting on April 30, 1921, voted to contribute toward the purchase of several rare delf china pieces for the Schuyler Mansion at Albany. A very old picture of George Washington painted on glass was given to the Chapter. Mrs. Frederic Menges was selected as historian to write the history of the Chapter.

Before the Rochester Historical Society and the local historians of Monroe County at their joint meeting on May 3, 1921, the State Historian, Dr. James Sullivan, spoke on "What Shall we Do to Hand Down the History of Monroe County's Part in the World War?"

The Schenectady County Historical Society at its meeting on May 3, 1921, voted to offer a prize of \$10 in gold to the member of the senior class in the high school writing the best essay on a subject connected with the history of the city or county. The subject is to be announced later.

The Daughters of Columbia County Historical Society at a meeting on May 4, 1921, decided to form an Albany branch. It is also planned to place markers and tablets on historical spots and buildings throughout Columbia County.

The Arcadia Historical Society of Newark at its meeting on April 23, 1921, listened to a paper on Indian History by Miss Ethel Williams in which she treated of the origin of the terms "Pre-emption Road," south of Lyons, and "Pre-emption Line."

During the month of May the New York Historical Society had an exhibit of colonial silver at its building in New York City. Among the pieces exhibited was one which was a gift by Queen Anne to Colonel Peter Schuyler. An account of the exhibit is given in a bulletin issued by the Society.

In the year 1920, there were 2918 visitors to the rooms of the Schenectady County Historical Society. The first four months of 1921, bid fair to establish a higher record.

The Herkimer County Historical Society held its meeting on May 14, 1921. An old account book of 1798, was donated by Hattie Caswell. Papers on "The Old Yale Lock" and on "Old Forge" were read. The committee on publications was directed to arrange to have printed those papers which had been read before the Society, but which had not as yet been published.

The Society decided to join in the celebration at Oriskany Battlefield in August.

At Letchworth Park on May 19, 1921, the Genesee County Historical Federation, the American Scenic and Historic Preservation Society and the Livingston County Historical Society held a joint meeting with the William Pryor Letchworth Memorial Association. Mr. E. R. Foreman delivered an address on Federating Historical Societies. This was published in part in the *Rochester Post Express* for May 26, 1921.

The Suffolk County Historical Society at its May meeting chose Ralph J. Hawkins of Patchogue president, and Miss Ruth Ackerly of Riverhead as recording secretary.

The Centennial Music Club of Liberty at its meeting on May 16, 1921, had a program which illustrated the development of American music.

At the May meeting of the Madison County Historical Society, Mrs. Julia Boylan presented a carving knife from the wreck of the Royal George which sank off Spithead in 1782.

The Rochester Historical Society received during May three portraits of people prominent in the history of the city: Isaac R. Elwood, Darius Perrin and Elizabeth Perrin.

The Albany Institute and Historical and Art Society has had made available for its funds a \$20,000 bequest from the estate of J. Townsend Lansing and a \$10,000 bequest from the estate of Dudley Olcott. A long list of gifts of manuscripts, books, portraits and furniture is given in a booklet just issued.

#### PUBLICATIONS, BOOKS, ARTICLES, MANUSCRIPTS

The Rochester Historical Society has issued its *Handbook* for 1921. It contains a history of the society, a list of papers read before the society during the last five years, an account of the society's collections, a description of the organization and work of the Genesee County Historical Federation, and a list of members.

The *Honeoye Times* in its issue of April 21, 1921, gives a *Roster of Civil War Veterans* from the town of Mendon compiled by Anah B. Yates, author of *The Pioneers of Mendon*, which has been appearing in the same newspaper.



Mrs. H. H. Frisbie of Roscoe is publishing in the *Roscoe Review* a series of articles which contain the lists of the burial places of the *Revolutionary Soldiers* who resided in the territory now covered by Sullivan County.

The *Sag Harbor News* is publishing a series of articles on the *Early Days of Sag Harbor*.

Mrs. Archie Gibbs of Norwich has written a paper on *Famous People Chenango County Has Given to the World*, portions of which were published in the *Oxford Times* of February 25, 1921.

The *New York Times* in its issue of February 27, 1921, published an article by the State Historian, Dr. James Sullivan on *State Records in Peril*.

The *Mount Morris Enterprise* under date of April 6, 1921, prints an article on the *Early Settlement and Growth of Mount Morris*, which was an address delivered February 1, 1855, at the dedication of the Presbyterian Church.

In the issue of the *Penn Yan Express* of March 9, 1921, appeared a chronological history of Penn Yan from 1776-1824, by Walter Wolcott.

In its issue of April 15, 1921, the *Ithaca Journal* made an appeal for material for a series of articles on pioneer families of Ithaca (before 1821) in connection with the celebration of the centenary of the establishment of the village.

The *Rochester Democrat and Chronicle* in its issue of May 25, 1921, publishes an article on *Ontario's Claim to a Piece of Seneca County*, which has been exploited by G. M. B. Hawley, a historian living in Geneva. The same paper in its issue of May 25, 1921, carried an article entitled: *Early History of Monroe County Court* by Oswald P. Backus.

The *Rochester Democrat and Chronicle* in its issue of May 9, 1921, publishes an article on the *Birthplace of Red Jacket*.

The *Bulletin of the New York Public Library* for April, 1921, lists a large number of its manuscript acquisitions for the year among which are numerous items touching all periods of the history of New York State; deeds for Hamilton lands in New York City; papers on the New York Central Railroad; account books of Nathan Williams, a merchant of Pompey and Manlius in the early 19th century; a photostat copy of a journal by a member of the 47th Regiment of Foot, British Army, 1775-1777, covering

in part military operations about Lake Champlain; papers about the New Hampshire Grants; a diary of Thomas K. Wharton 1853-1859, describing in part a journey through New York State.

*The New York Genealogical and Biographical Record* for April 1921 contains articles on *Josiah Collins Pumpelly*; *Thomas C. Butler and His Descendants*; *Tompkins County Gravestone Inscriptions* (Town of Caroline); *Early New York Church Records* by R. W. Vosburgh; *The Old Newby* (family) *Bible*; *Westchester County Miscellanea*, (items taken from early land records at White Plains).

No. 5, New Series of *Valentine's Manual of Old New York*, edited by Henry Collins Brown, and published at 15 East 40th Street, New York City has appeared.

*The Records of Christ Church, Poughkeepsie*, New York, Volume II, containing the Parish Register, 1766-1916, edited by Helen W. Reynolds, has recently been issued.

*Lists of Swiss Emigrants in the Eighteenth Century to the American Colonies*, (Volume I, Zurich, 1734-1744), is the title of a volume by Professor A. B. Faust, which has been recently issued.

*George Rowland Howe*, is the title of a volume by Herbert B. Howe which contains much information about related families in Little Britain, Hudson and Homer, New York. It may be obtained from the author who lives in Mt. Kisco.

In the *Annual Publications of the Historical Society of Southern California* for 1919, there is to be found in the article on *California Pioneer Journalists from 1846-1857*, material about former New Yorkers: Sam Brannan and James McClatchy.

*State Service* for April, 1921 has articles on *Career and Work of John Burroughs*; *Joseph Pulitzer, a Great American Journalist*; and *Two Old Parties as Obstructionists*.

The *Sheffield Observer* (Penn.) is doing a good thing in running a column devoted to *Local History and Genealogy of Warren County*.

The *Annual Report of the American Historical Association*, 1917, (which just recently appeared) contains a list (p. 205) of historical societies in New York State. Many new societies have come into existence since then.

In the *Journal of History* for January, 1921, is an article on *The Book of Mormon, Its Translation and Publication*, in which the history of this work and of its printing at Palmyra in 1829 is told. An estimate of it from *Harpers Magazine* for October 1851, is reprinted.

In the *Ohio Archaeological and Historical Quarterly* for October, 1920, *Celeron's Journal* which has been running in previous issues is concluded. In the January 1921 issue is an article on *Early Journeys to the Ohio*, by B. F. Prince, in which George Croghan and Henry Montour, so prominent in early New York State history, are frequently mentioned.

The *Missouri Historical Review* for April, 1920, has an article by Jonas Viles and J. E. Wrench entitled *A Guide to the Study of Local History and the Collection of Historical Material*, which is very useful for all communities in all states. There is also an article on *How You Can Organize a Local Historical Society*, by C. H. McClure, reprinted from *Fair Facts*.

The *Year Book of the Daughters of the American Revolution of New York State, 1919-1920*, is a veritable compendium of the activities of the various chapters. Much of the work done is of an interesting historical nature.

Maurice F. Egan and John B. Kennedy are the authors of a book entitled *The Knights of Columbus in Peace and War* (New Haven: 1920.)

*Soldiers of the Church*, by John W. Pritchard tells the activities of the Reformed Presbyterians in the World War. (New York: The Christian Nation.)

In the preface to *Christoph von Graffenried's Account of the Founding of New Bern* in North Carolina (Raleigh: North Carolina Historical Commission.) the authors—Vincent H. Todd and Julius Goebel, pay a high tribute to the Palatines of New York State, and in a chapter of the introduction they tell of the causes for the Palatine migration. Much of the information comes from the *Ecclesiastical Records* published by New York State.

In the *Annals of Iowa* for April, 1921, is an article on *William Floyd* for whom Floyd County in Iowa was named. He was a New Yorker, a signer of the Declaration of Independence and was prominent in Long Island affairs. There is also an article on *Henry Clay Dean's 'Correspondence' with Horace Greeley*. There are obituaries of Henry Harrison Rood, James H. Wilson, Charles Trumbull Granger, all born in New York State. There are also in the same number a series of *Sketches of the Mormon Era in Nauvoo, Illinois*.

In the collections of the Connecticut Historical Society is a manuscript *Diary of Rev. David Avery 1771-1815* who went on extended missionary tours in New York State. The Society also has genealogical charts of the Ogden family of Middletown, New York.

The Society of Descendants of Henry Wolcott has published its *Report of Proceedings* for the Year 1920.

In the *New York Libraries* for May, 1921, F. K. Walter has an article of great use to local historians under the title of *Fugitive Material and Clippings*.

In the *Bulletin of the New York Public Library* for May, 1921, is continued the series of articles entitled *A History of the New York Public Library*.

In the *Proceedings of the Second Annual State History Conference* published in May, 1921, by the Indiana Historical Commission there are articles on the *Relation of Community History to State History*; *Patriotic and War History*; *What the D. A. R. and Similar Organizations Can do to Promote the State's History*.

The larger part of volume XXIV, 1920, of the *Buffalo Historical Society Publications* is occupied by a paper by Frederick Houghton entitled *History of the Buffalo Creek Reservation*, in which he upholds the theory that the name Buffalo came from an Indian fisherman who lived there, and not from the presence of buffaloes in the region. Other sections in this volume deal with: *General Brown's Inspection Tour up the Lakes in 1819*; *Service of Captain Samuel D. Harris*; *The Story of Phinney's Western Almanack*; *Letters of John Haddock*; *Early Travel on Lake Erie*; *Mail Service in 1812*; *Buffalo in the World War*; *War Memorials at St. Paul's*; *Memorial 100th N. Y. Volunteers in the Civil War*; *Periodical Press of Buffalo*; *Old Buildings That are Gone*; *A Famous Old Law Office*. Many illustrations and diagrams accompany the articles.

In the *Bulletin of the American Library Association* for July, 1920, are reports on the *War Service of the Association* and on the *Revision of Adams' Manual of Historical Literature*.

The *Mississippi Valley Historical Review* for December 1920, has an article by Helen Broshar entitled *The First Push Westward of the Albany Traders*.

The *Report of the Buffalo Historical Society* presented at the annual meeting in January, 1921, contains a concise history of the leading events taking place in Buffalo during the year 1920.

The *Grosvenor Library Bulletin* (Buffalo, New York) for December, 1920, contains many letters of Millard Fillmore and an article by Peter A. Porter entitled *Niagara's Earliest Legend of the White Man*.

A local committee has issued an account of the *Dedication of the Memorial to John Graham and Comrades*, who were killed in a skirmish with the Indians at Chestnut Woods near Grahamsville, September 5, 1778.

In the *Journal of the American Irish Historical Society*, Vol. XVIII, 1919, is printed an address by Major Thomas T. Reilly on the activities of the 165th Regiment of the 42nd Division. This regiment was the old 69th Regiment of the New York State National Guard.

The Lewis H. Morgan Chapter publishes in the *Researches and Transactions of the New York State Archaeological Association* two articles: *Treaty Making with the Indians* and *The Kon-on-daigua Peace Congress*— by George P. Decker and Charles F. Milliken respectively.

The *Bulletin of the New York Public Library* for March, 1921, continues the *History of the New York Public Library*, this installment being from 1895-1911.

*The Story of the Liberty Loans* is the title of a book by Labert Sinclair dealing with the promotion of these loans during the World War. It is to be obtained from Rachel B. Ezekiel, Memorial Continental Hall, Washington, D. C.

*The Birth of Our Flag and Flag Etiquette* by Louis Barcroft Runk is published by J. B. Lippincott Company, Philadelphia.

The *News-Letter* for March, 21, of the *National Society United States Daughters of 1812* notes the gifts by the society to the Roosevelt House at 28 East 20th Street, New York City.

The *New York Historical Society Quarterly Bulletin* for April, 1921, has articles on *Colonial Silver in the Society's Collection*; *Nash Dutch Collection of Household Utensils*; *A Pioneer Settler's House on Spuyten Duyvil Hill*; *Laight Street Baptist Church Marriages 1841-1850*; and *The Beekman Coach* with an illustration. Kelby's *Notes on American Artists* is continued in this issue.

*The Twenty-Fifth Annual Report of the American Scenic and Historic Preservation Society, 1920*, gives, in addition to its elaborate reports on parks and reservations in New York State, a mass of information about proposed memorials and parks, events of historic importance for the year, anniversaries celebrated, soldiers graves, a list of those to whom the freedom of the City of New York has been granted, newly chosen names for the Hall of Fame, and events of a similar nature in foreign lands. Numerous illustrations accompany the text for each article. A fine collection of half tones of old houses in Staten Island, Brooklyn, New Paltz is in the volume.

In the *Wisconsin Magazine of History* for March, 1921, there are articles on *The Military Education of Grant as a General*; *More Light on Jonathan Carver*; and *An Historical Museum*— how to organize one.

In *The American Historical Review* for April, 1921, is an article by Ross H. McLean on *Troop Movements on the American Railroads during the Great War*.

*William Shirley, Governor of Massachusetts, 1741-1756*, by George A. Wood (New York: Longmans Green, and Company) has much material about New York.

In *The Historical Outlook* for April, 1921, Col. O. L. Spaulding, Jr., contributes an article entitled *Research Work in the Historical Branch of the General Staff*.

*New York City in Indian Possession* is the title of a volume by Reginald P. Bolton published by the Heye Foundation of the Museum of the American Indian, New York.

The volume edited by William O. Owen and entitled *The Medical Department of the United States Army during the Period of the Revolution, 1776-1786*, (New York: Paul B. Hoeber) covers New York State along with the rest of the colonies.

*The Fitch Papers, Correspondence and Documents during Thomas Fitch's Governorship of the Colony of Connecticut, 1754-1766* (Volume II, January 1756-May 1766), published by the Connecticut Historical Society, has much material relating to New York men and events of the period.

Mr. Peter Nelson head of the Manuscript Division of the New York State Library made for the QUARTERLY this analysis:

In the volume of proceedings of this association for 1917, recently distributed, there was included a section on *Writings on New York History 1916*; it includes those items of the national bibliography, *Writings on American History 1916*, which have a special New York interest. The bibliography itself classifies these items by subjects, but an analysis by source presents some interesting results:

General (individual authors, churches, institutions, etc.)	71
Societies and periodicals	186
U. S.—Historical, genealogical, patriotic	115
U. S.—Other	59
Canadian and British	10
Other foreign	2
Official publications	20
U. S. Gov't.	4
New York (state and cities)	15
Other	1
Total	277

From another standpoint the same items were grouped as:

Analytics, separates (articles or papers in periodicals, reports and proceedings)	172
Books	73
Pamphlets (items of less than 100 pages are put in this group, unless their importance or method of publication clearly entitles them to rank as books)	32
Total	277

The group "Societies and periodicals—Other foreign" is unexpectedly small and contained only two articles, both rather questionably included in the list and from French periodicals, one an article on Thomas Paine, the other a translation from Walt Whitman. U. S. documents are credited with only four items, two biographical sketches in the Professional Memoirs of the Corps of Engineers, two memorial volumes on deceased Members of Congress from this State. Official publications from outside the United States yields one item, a bulletin of the Canadian Geological Survey on Iroquois foods and food preparation.

The total number of New York items was 277, of American items 3156 (strict accuracy would require the addition of a considerable number of items listed under numbers followed by the letters a, b, c,), showing New York items to be about 8.8 percent of the total.

Items classed as publications of historical, genealogical and patriotic societies and of periodicals in the same fields number 115. Of these, there were issued by the societies of this State, listed below, 57 items. These represent as well as may be done by such a list (the limitations of which are obvious), the literary product of the historical societies of the State. The American Scenic and Historic Preservation Society has been included because of its very close relations to the State and its semi-official character as a New York organization; the New York Genealogical and Biographical Record is included because it is the organ of a society which deserves to be included among the historical societies of the State though not bearing the word "history" in its title.

#### State Societies

American Scenic and Historic Preservation Society	5	
Holland Society	1	
New York Genealogical and Biographical Record	18	
New York Genealogical and Biographical Society (typed church records)	7	
New York State Historical Association	9	40

#### Local Societies

Dutchess County Historical Society	1	
Kings County Historical Society Magazine	1	
Livingston County Historical Society	4	
New York Historical Society	2	
City History Club of New York	1	
Newburgh Bay and the Highlands Historical Society Publications	3	
Onondaga Historical Association	2*	
Staten Island Antiquarian Society	2	
Rochester Historical Society	1	17
Total		57

\*Two entries for one item.



## MUSEUMS, HISTORICAL MONUMENTS AND REMAINS

The old Alonzo Welch House, which stood on the site of the British camp at Schuylerville, and which was the birth place of the late Supreme Court Justice, George R. Salisbury was burned to the ground February 21, 1921.

The old bell in the Middlebury Academy at Wyoming was given by Mrs. Silas Ewell. It is said to have been the first bell hung west of the Genesee river.

Dr. John M. Clarke is urging the erection of a State museum building as a memorial to Theodore Roosevelt. In this Dr. Clarke would like to house the present natural history and science collection which has outgrown its quarters in the Education Building. In the space thus made vacant the State Historian would like to see a State History Museum started in which materials relating to the history of the State could be exhibited. In this regard our western states are far ahead of New York.

Some interest has recently been shown in the preservation of the Mabie House near Rotterdam Junction, said to be the oldest house in the Mohawk Valley. It was certainly standing in 1706—and Major MacMurray, editor of Pearson's *History of Schenectady Patent* believes that it was built between 1670 and 1680.

A bill introduced in this session of the State legislature by Assemblyman MacFarland and Senator Kavanaugh would have the State purchase the Freeman farm at Stillwater over which the battle of Saratoga was fought in 1777.

The Huguenot Association of New Rochelle is urging the preservation of the old Union Avenue school building as a suitable place for G. A. R. and American Legion rooms.

The New York Historical Society has on exhibition two old coaches one owned by the Beekman family and built about 1770, and the other used by Stephen van Rensselaer and built about 1818.

The old homestead of General Ely S. Parker, the Indian military secretary of General Grant, is still standing on the Tonawanda Reservation.

The naval training ship Granite State, which was commissioned in 1818 as the U. S. S. New Hampshire, and which had been

moored at 97th Street and the Hudson River, New York City, was burned to the water's edge on May 23, 1921.

The old Conrad Welch house which was built in Dansville in 1804, is being torn down to make room for a modern dwelling.

The "approach signs" to be placed upon the highways entering New Rochelle are to be symbolic of the early history of the city.

#### WORLD WAR MEMORIALS AND COLLECTIONS

A memorial tablet in honor of the nine graduates of the New York State Agricultural School at Hornell, who died in the service, was unveiled March 29, 1921.

The schools of Cuba (New York) on April 22, 1921, planted trees in honor of former pupils who lost their lives in the World War. A memorial tablet is to commemorate the men.

The Rochester Historical Society is preserving the motion picture films taken of the procession in honor of the soldier dead whose bodies were returned to the city in March.

The Lewiston Union School on May 30, 1921, unveiled a tablet in honor of "the men of the school and of the community who patriotically responded to the call of their country in the World War." The tablet was erected and dedicated by the Red Cross of Lewiston.

In the *Annual Publications of the Historical Society of Southern California* is an article on the Los Angeles County War History Committee by Mrs. F. M. Charlton-Harmon which gives a complete plan of organization for the work in other counties along similar lines.

21-27150

# The Quarterly Journal

of the

## New York State Historical Association



Volume II

October 1921

Number 4

Entered as second class mail matter October 22, 1919, at the Post Office at Albany, New York  
under the Act of August 24, 1912.

# NEW YORK STATE HISTORICAL ASSOCIATION

## Quarterly Journal

### Editorial Committee

JAMES SULLIVAN, Managing Editor

DIXON R. FOX

FREDERICK B. RICHARDS

---

---

## CONTENTS

THE ADMINISTRATION OF BENJAMIN FLETCHER IN NEW YORK	- - - - -	Alice Davis	213
JOSEPH AVERY'S JOURNAL, 1799	- - - - -	S. D. Van Alstine	251
OBITUARIES	- - - - -	By George A. Ingalls	267
REVIEWS OF BOOKS	- - - - -		269
<i>Davis, History of the New York Times; Ross and Slaughter, With the 351st in France; —————, Hickox's Army; Bailey, Influences Toward Radicalism in Connecticut, 1754-1775.</i>			
NOTES AND QUERIES	- - - - -		272
STATEMENT	: - - - -		281

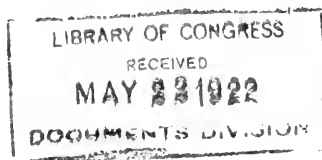
---

---

Subscription Price \$1.50

Single Numbers 40 cents

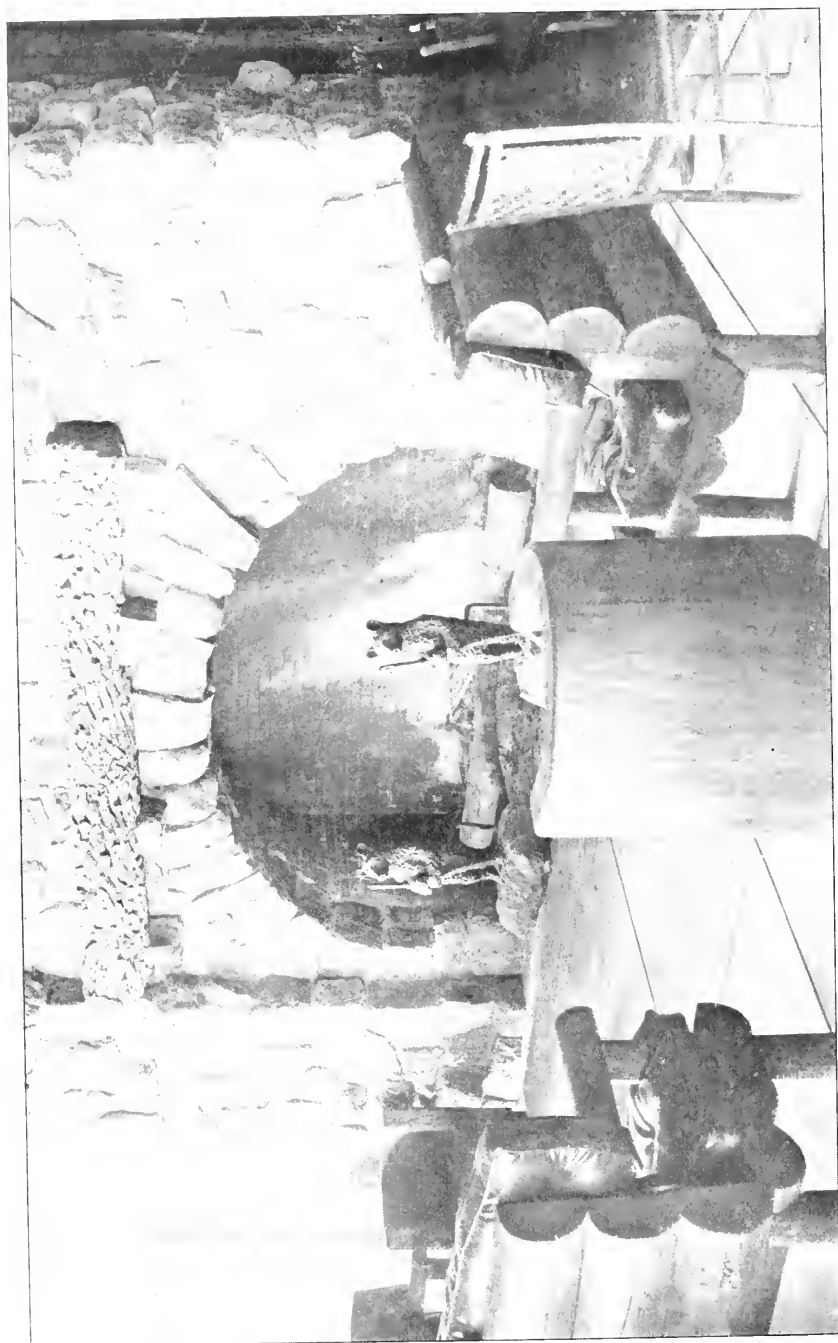
Address all contributions and communications to  
New York State Historical Association, Albany.



THE UNIVERSITY OF CHICAGO  
LIBRARY

1000 S. EAST ASIAN LIBRARY  
CHICAGO, ILL. 60607

1000 S. EAST ASIAN LIBRARY  
CHICAGO, ILL. 60607



The Fire Place in the Room Where the Meetings Were Held.

---

---

# The Quarterly Journal

of the New York State Historical Association

---

---

## THE ADMINISTRATION OF BENJAMIN FLETCHER IN NEW YORK

When the Duke of York became king of England his proprietary colony of New York became naturally a royal province. There was, however, no immediate, perceptible change in the system of government. Governor Dongan, who had been the representative of the duke, remained as the agent of the king. It is true that the commission which James II. soon after his accession issued to Dongan constituting him royal Governor, did make one change of vital importance to the province. The Governor and his Council were vested with sole legislative power, and thus the very brief experience of the people with a representative assembly was temporarily ended. From this period until the Revolution which swept from power both James and his royal Governor, New York had no representative body. During the short and irregular administration of Leisler, an assembly was called, and the royal Governors appointed by William and Mary were specifically instructed to call an assembly of the people.

A royal province was a dependency of the crown. The king was its proprietor and administrator, and the Governor, his representative. The commission and instructions issued by the king to his agent for guidance in administration might be called the constitution of the province. The members of the Provincial Council who were appointed by the king, though often upon the recommendation of the Governor, formed the advisory board, the Privy Council of the Executive, and at the same time the upper house of the legislature. With the advice and consent of this council, the Governor was authorized to make laws, statutes,

and ordinances, the only qualification being that they should be in accordance with the laws of England. With the advice of the Council, he was to establish courts of judicature and public justice. He was to appoint judges, justices of the peace and other officers, judicial, executive and military. The Governor and Council together formed the highest court in the province. The Governor was commander-in-chief of all the forces in the colony. He had a limited pardoning power. He was also vice-admiral. A royal Governor was then a viceroy who was a legislator, an executive, a general and a judge, "a combination of offices," says Long, in his history of Jamaica, "which at first view, seems to require an accomplished education, such a comprehensive power of genius, judgment, memory, and experience as are almost inconsistent with the limited period of mortal existence, or with the common faculties of the human mind. Would not a Chinese philosopher, if he were to be told of these various employments thus centered in one man, necessarily conclude that the first and ablest geniuses were collected from the whole nation, to undertake and execute a system of duty so complicated. But what must be his amazement, to be informed that, in general, their qualifications have been neither inquired into, nor regarded in the appointment. From the commander of a brigade of foot, a gentleman is metamorphosed, on a sudden, into a grave judge of courts, to discuss cases in equity, solve knotty points of law, or expound the doctrine of last wills and inheritance. I have heard of a colony chancellor who used to throw the dice in order to determine which way he should decree. The higher throw went in favor of the complainant, the lower for the defendant." While some of the provincial Governors were not so poorly equipped as the subjects of Long's trenchant criticism, it is quite evident that many of them were utterly lacking in preparation for their important vice-regal position.

Benjamin Fletcher was appointed royal Governor of the province of New York in 1692, and by his commission and instructions he became a legislator, an executive, a general and a judge. The entire administrative machinery of the colony was set in motion by his will. He appointed almost all officers of government, executive, judicial, and military. The principal officers of the province, aside from the Governor and Council, were the secretary,



the collector and receiver-general, attorney-general, justices of the supreme court, custom house officers, and the auditor-general, who resided in England. Of these, all except the secretary, collector, and the auditor-general, were appointees of the Executive. The principal municipal officers were the mayor, recorder, and town clerk for each of the towns of New York and Albany. The sheriff was the chief county officer. Aldermen, collectors, assessors and constables were elective. All salaries, including the Governor's, were to be paid out of the revenue of the colony. The Governor's salary was fixed at six hundred pounds. The perquisites of the office were seizures of ships, probates of wills, marriage licenses, fines and forfeitures.

The judicial system included the single justice court, with power to determine any suit or controversy to the value of forty shillings; the county courts, or courts of common pleas, which had cognizance of civil action to any value except what concerned title of land, and no action could be removed from these courts if the damage was under twenty pounds; the mayor and aldermen's court, with the same power as the county courts; the Supreme Court, which had the power of king's bench, common pleas and exchequer in England, and no action could be removed from this court if under one hundred pounds; Court of Chancery, consisting of the Governor and Council, which court had the power of the Chancery Court in England, and from its sentence or decree nothing could be removed under three hundred pounds; a court martial at Albany, presided over by the commander of the forces; the admiralty court, of which the home government reserved the appointment of a judge, register and marshal. The mayor and aldermen in New York and Albany were justices of the peace, and as such, had the power to hold the court of quarter sessions. There was also the prerogative court. The only officers of this court were the governor and secretary, and the business was the granting administrations and proving of wills. The total amount paid for salaries in 1693, the first year of Governor Fletcher's administration, was 1738 pounds. The militia of the province for the same year consisted of forty-nine companies of foot and five of horse, in all two thousand, nine hundred and thirty-two men. In addition to the militia, there were two companies of regulars of one hundred men each, sent over from England and stationed at Albany. Later, two other companies were sent.

The great strategic importance of New York and the responsibility which it involved were as thoroughly recognized by Governor Fletcher as they had been by his ablest predecessors, and he was convinced of the necessity for maintaining a strong garrison at the frontier post of Albany. He had been authorized by the king to build forts at Albany, Schenectady, and other places, but it had been expressly stated that the charge should be defrayed out of the revenue of the colony, or by contributions of the inhabitants. It was no slight requirement which was made of New York at this time. Upon the defence of this province depended the safety of all the central and southern possessions of England in America, and for this defence the colony was to depend solely upon her own resources, aided only by such contributions as her governor might find it possible to induce the neighboring colonies to make. The detachments of militia which the Governor was compelled to send to Albany from time to time caused constant irritation throughout the province, and the money required to support volunteers was grudgingly levied by the assemblies. The assistance given by the other colonies, even though they were first entreated and then commanded by the English rulers to aid New York, was comparatively insignificant. From the beginning of the year 1691 to the end of 1695, Virginia, Maryland, the Jerseys and Connecticut together contributed three thousand fifty-one pounds, while New York in the meantime had spent nearly thirty thousand pounds.

The distribution of the population was unfortunate for effective defence, as the greater part of the people lived on Long Island, and in Manhattan, one hundred and fifty miles from the frontier. The country in the direction of Albany was almost unpopulated.

As to the resources of the government, it is only necessary to state that members of the Council had been compelled to borrow money at ten per cent in order to keep up current expenses. The heavy burden of taxation and other inconveniences incident to a state of war had caused much dissatisfaction and apparently no inconsiderable part of the people had sought homes in the unexposed neighboring provinces. The General Assembly usually refused to grant supplies for a longer period than one year at a time, and every form of expenditure was jealously questioned. All money was paid out by warrant from the Governor, and this

caused members of the legislature to maintain a suspicious attitude toward the Executive. The greater part of the people were very poor, the collection of taxes slow, and the government continually in arrears.

The General Assembly in session when Fletcher arrived presented an address at one of his first council meetings calling his attention to the unsatisfactory condition of the province as the result of carrying on an expensive war. They declared the revenue exhausted, the government in debt, the taxes lately levied for the necessary defence of the province unpaid, while the impoverished people, they said, were almost in a state of mutiny. This same legislature passed bills for issuing warrants to the justices for payment of arrears, for the appointment of auditors to determine the just debts of the province, for the annual expenses, and for the appointment of commissioners to make an estimate of the debts in the several counties.

During the session of the first assembly called by Fletcher, at a meeting of the joint committee of the house and Council, the chairman for the house said in regard to limiting the establishment of the revenue to two years, "We do not intend any abridgment of their majesties' revenue, but we have regard to the heavy burden and great poverty of the people of this province. Our neighbors on both sides are without government, free of all taxes, duties, services, and have got both our trade and our inhabitants. We are in daily hopes," he concluded, "of having those neighboring colonies of Connecticut, the Jersies, and Pennsylvania annexed to us as formerly."

Attention has already been called to the great service which New York was rendering the king by protecting the colonies south of her, and to the fact that all expenses were to be paid out of the revenue. Governor Fletcher, however, as the king's representative, chose to take the royal point of view. In trying to urge the Assembly to settle the revenue upon their majesties for life instead of one year, or a limited period of years, he became eloquent over the king's generosity in devoting the entire revenue of the province to the support of the government thereof, and in addition to this, furnishing a man-of-war to patrol the coast, two companies of regulars for garrison duty, and some stores of war.

It is already apparent that the problems confronting the Governor were sufficient to tax the ingenuity of a capable and experienced administrator, but his troubles were incalculably increased by the animosities of political factions. The Leisler movement had given rise to a crude sort of party government, while his execution had served to intensify the bitterness of partisan spirit. The provincial councillors and the entire body of officials were the declared enemies of Leisler and his adherents. Some of the latter, indeed, were in prison under sentence of death, but had been granted a reprieve by Governor Sloughter. The personnel of the councillors chosen by William at the time of Sloughter's appointment probably justified Fletcher in assuming that the whole Leislerian party was under the ban of royal displeasure. At any rate, he at once identified himself with the anti-Leislerian faction, and continued to support that party throughout his administration, thus, of course, incurring the opposition of the other faction.

Now, to get a clear conception of the situation, let us sum up the main points. Here is a frontier province in time of war between England and France, with its sparse population impoverished and discontented, and distracted by civil dissension. The revenue is insufficient for the support of the government. On the south and west are colonies willing to be protected, but unwilling to contribute to the protection. On the north are the Five Nations, the strong Iroquois confederacy, courageous and cunning, a defence and a menace at the same time, and requiring the most skilful management to hold them to their allegiance to the English.

The task before the provincial Executive was to harmonize discordant elements in the colony, to evolve order out of chaos, peace out of strife, to provide means for building fortifications, maintaining an efficient garrison, and an able body of militia subject to a moment's call, and at the same time aim to keep up amicable relations with the restless and suspicious savages whose friendship the French were sparing no effort to win; all this was to be done in addition to the regular, legitimate civil administration of an agent armed with vice-regal power. The man chosen to execute this important and difficult task was untrained in statecraft, unskilled in diplomacy, unexperienced in admin-

istration, and one whose sole qualification consisted in a creditable service in a minor military capacity.

The subject which demanded Governor Fletcher's first and constant attention was the relation between his government and the Iroquois confederacy on the north. Down to the time of the first administration of Andros there had been no trouble between the French and English in regard to colonial possessions in America. Andros, however, boldly laid claim, in the name of the Duke of York, to all lands south of the St. Lawrence River and Lake Ontario. Dongan not only reasserted the claim, but actually succeeded in inducing the Iroquois to voluntarily place themselves under the protection of the duke and become the subjects of the English king. This was done in 1684 when Dongan met the Five Nations in Albany. Governor Dongan recognized the Indians as the bulwark of the colony against assault of the French in Canada. He had the duke's arms placed on the Indian castles as protection against the French. In this negotiation with the Five Nations, Dongan was aided by the friendly relations which had existed between the Indians and the inhabitants of the province from the very beginning of the Dutch rule on Manhattan Island. Of course, the French in Canada had vigorously opposed the English claim and both de la Barre and Denonville invaded the Iroquois territory, but Dongan was able to hold them true to the English alliance. When Andros received his commission as royal Governor in 1688 he was instructed to inform the Governor of Canada that the King of England had resolved to own the Five Nations as his subjects and to protect them as such. The Iroquois had indeed when it suited their purpose rejected the assumption that they were British subjects, and had even asserted their independence of both England and France and proclaimed their intention to preserve a perfect neutrality.

Notwithstanding this high tone, however, and the intriguing of French Jesuits, and flattery and presents of French agents, the Five Nations were the recognized allies of the English colonists throughout the struggle between the French and English which involved their American colonial possessions. There was indeed no guarantee that the savages would not avail themselves of the rights so freely exercised by civilized nations and enter into treaty relations with their former enemies if their interests could be

better secured by so doing. The continuation of the Indian alliance then depended upon the ability of the New York Executive to convince the Iroquois of the power and the determination of the English to render them efficient assistance in their effort to resist French domination.

Fletcher was as fully convinced as Dongan had been that the Five Nations constituted the principal defence of the English against French invasion, and he had not been long in the province before an opportunity occurred to test his strength with the great sachems and warriors on the north. Early in February, 1693, Major Ingoldsby, commander of the forces at Albany, notified the Governor that a party of French and their Indian allies were at Schenectady, and it was feared had already fallen upon the upper castle of the Mohawks. This news reached Fletcher on the morning of February 14th, and at three o'clock in the afternoon he embarked for Albany with one hundred and fifty men. An hour later, eight sloops loaded with provisions and ammunition sailed up the Hudson. On the morning of the seventeenth he arrived at Albany and immediately hastened to Schenectady, but was too late to be of any assistance, as word came from Major Schuyler, commander of the forces sent to repel the attack, that the French had retreated, and he was returning to Albany. From the report made by Schuyler to Fletcher it is evident that the Indians were not satisfied that the proper means were being employed to assist them. He says he was permitted, at his own request, to go to Schenectady to pacify the Indians, who were enraged because no Christians had gone out to pursue the enemy. Fletcher received an address of congratulation from the corporation of Albany, and held a conference with the sachems of the Five Nations. He told them that the calamity had come upon them through their own negligence in not keeping spies posted. At their request he issued a proclamation prohibiting the sale of rum during the war, and also ordered that a smith should live among them, to keep their arms in repair. The Indians named the Governor Cagenquiragoe the great swift arrow, because of his speedy arrival with so many men for their relief. They were not backward, however, in making suggestions of their own, but informed him that they desired a force sent by sea to attack the French in Canada and declared it impossible to take it by land alone. They also frankly

told him that they might be able to do much more damage to the enemy had they been so well provided with arms and ammunition as were the Indians of Canada. They desired him to inform the king that it would be easy to destroy Canada if all the colonies would unite, and the king at the same time cooperate with a fleet. This plan of union of all the English colonies now suggested by the Iroquois sachems, had been first proposed by them many years before, and indeed seems to have originated with them, nor were they ever reconciled to the scattered and disunited condition of their English allies, for nominally at least, most of the colonies south and west of New York were in the alliance.

In writing to the Committee of Trade and Plantations, Fletcher had occasion frequently to remind them of the Indian discontent in the matter. The Indians, he complained, are discouraged, because the other colonies do not assist New York. The French of Canada, he wrote them, receive yearly supplies from France. The Indians, he continued, are now considering making peace with Count Frontenac. However, a few days after this letter was sent to England, a messenger from the Five Nations to the French governor informed him that any peace they made with him must include the Governor of New York. It was in vain that the angry Count accused them of folly in allowing the people of Albany to triumph over them to such an extent that they could do nothing without their consent. The Indians boldly replied that they and the English were inseparable, and that they could have no peace with him so long as he made war with the English. That this announcement represented their unalterable determination is not likely, for a few weeks later Fletcher again wrote the Committee of Trade and Plantations that the Indians were becoming so weary of war and were so far prevailed upon by the presents and power of the French of Canada that they would not turn their arms that way. Some of the best councillors, he continued, believed it better to let the Indians make peace with Canada, provided they would remain neutral. The Iroquois were indeed thoroughly tired of the war and made a great effort to conclude a peace with Count Frontenac which should include the Governor of New York. The Count, however, absolutely refused to entertain any such proposition, and a peace might have been made

between the Five Nations and the French which would have left the English at the mercy of both had not trouble arisen over Frontenac's determination to rebuild the fort at Cadaraqui and place a garrison there. Cadaraqui, now Kingston, Canada, had been originally fortified and made a trading post, with the consent of the Iroquois, by Frontenac, during his first term as Governor, but it had been destroyed and abandoned by Denonville. Frontenac now decided to reoccupy it, but when he informed the Indians of his purpose, he met a positive refusal to agree to it, and this ended the peace proposals. The fact that the Indians would not yield this point was probably due to Fletcher's influence. He had led them to believe that, if they allowed the French to build a fort anywhere on Lake Ontario, their liberty would be seriously menaced. He had also assured them of his assistance in repelling any attempt of the French in that direction.

In all communications and negotiations with the Indians, Governor Fletcher had the able assistance of Major Schuyler, mayor of Albany, and in 1696, when the Governor organized a Board of Commissioners for Indian affairs, Schuyler was first commissioner. Before this, Indian affairs had been managed, sometimes by the Albany magistrates and sometimes by military officers stationed at Albany. In 1675 Governor Andros had organized a local Board of Commissioners for Indian affairs. Of this Board he appointed as secretary the town clerk of Albany, Robert Livingston. Regular minutes were kept of the transactions of the Albany Commissioners, beginning with 1675, which in 1751 were bound in four large folio volumes. They have now disappeared.

This Board was to transact all important business with the Indians in the Governor's absence and report to him and the Council. It was provided with a small sum of money, one hundred pounds, for the purpose of making presents to visiting sachems, for the service of interpreters, and all necessary expenses. In dealing with the Indians, neither Frontenac nor Fletcher omitted any detail which would tend to impress the savage imagination. The French Governor held his important conferences at Quebec, where the Indians might see the strong fortifications and the war ships riding in the harbor, might witness the military parades, and hear the thunder of artillery. When business was despatched, he entertained them lavishly, pleased them with presents, and



then had them escorted out of the capital by a retinue of French officers.

It was not in Fletcher's power, of course, to rival the French display, but at his bleak, impoverished frontier post, he had made the most of the resources at his command. The regulars and militia paraded in showy uniforms, while the Governor and his Council, together with the magistrates of the town, furnished the civil pomp. When the sachems visited him in New York, he entertained them at his residence, ordered out his famous coach and six, and had them driven around the city and into the country, by which, he says, they were extremely obliged. Unfortunately, we have no record of the impression made upon the dwellers on Manhattan by these highly amusing proceedings.

Count Frontenac watched his opportunity to rebuild the fort at Cadaraqui and by circulating false rumors of his intended designs against both the Indians and the English, thus keeping them on the alert in places of safety, succeeded in his purpose without molestation from either. He also invaded the Indian country, burned their castles, and destroyed their corn. In August, 1696, Fletcher, writing to the Lords of Trade, said, "I had intelligence on the second instant that the Governor of Canada, with one thousand French and two thousand Indians, was in the Indian territory, and that the people of Albany were in some consternation lest the Indians of the Five Nations should join with them and fall down upon Schenectady and Albany." It was reported that an Indian carried tidings to Count Frontenac that Fletcher was on the march from Albany with a great army as numerous as the trees of the wood, which hastened his departure. The Governor of New York spent the following winter in Albany, in order to lead the forces in person against the French, as it was expected an attack would be made upon the town. He sent messengers to the Five Nations to let them know that he was there to protect them. It was necessary for Fletcher to continually assure the Indians of his interest in their welfare and his determination to aid in protecting them, and it was specially desirable to conciliate them at this time, as they were in no amiable mood since the re-occupation of Cadaraqui. In the meantime Governor Fletcher and the Council began to realize the impossibility of holding out much longer.

Nicoll and Brooke, two leading members of the Council, were sent to England as special agents of the province, and one of the most important matters with which they were charged was the Indian question. Before the Commissioners of Trade and Plantations they represented the necessity for preserving the friendship of the Indians, which, they declared, must be done by making them presents, and to keep up a reputation with them, they said, there must be an appearance of strength. In submitting a plan for securing New York, they suggested, First, the dispossession of the French in Canada and the settling of an English colony there; or, as an alternative of this, to lay out a thousand pounds a year in arms, ammunition, and clothes for presents to the Indians. Second, that during the war, a garrison of about one thousand men should be kept on the frontiers of New York, toward Canada, in order to impress the Indians with the strength of their English allies. They also suggested the erection of a stone fort at Albany and fortifications at Schenectady and other places, and they declared it specially desirable to have a fort near the Lake. They advised the sending of yearly recruits of men and stores of war from England, and in imitation of the French policy, they suggested that a number of hardy youths should be sent to live among the Indians, to learn their customs and manners, and that Protestant clergymen should dwell among them. The first proposition was in accordance with the often expressed wish of the Indians. As we have already seen, the leading sachems had at an early date advised the union of the colonists in a movement against the French in Canada, and the lack of union, and especially the failure of the neighboring provinces to assist New York, was a cause of constant complaint on the part of the Five Nations. There are numerous evidences that the Iroquois understood well the advantages of union, and the weakness resulting from disunion. They were not slow to see, too, that supplies came from France much more regularly and in greater abundance than from England.

During the winter of 'ninety-six, as has been said, Fletcher remained in Albany, expecting a French invasion, but Count Frontenac had been unable to carry out his threats of invasion, owing to a famine at home. Nevertheless, the Indians had

suffered so severely, and become so thoroughly convinced that their allies were unable to render them efficient assistance, that they were determined to make another effort to establish peace with the French. Early in January of 'ninety-seven the Commissioners for Indian Affairs wrote Governor Fletcher that the last invasion by the French had created such consternation among the Mohawks, the Oneidas, and the Onondagas, that very few of them continued to live in their castles, and that nothing but the Governor's presence in Albany during the preceding winter had kept them in their own country. They assured him, if the force for their protection was not greatly enlarged, that the Indians would abandon their country. Successful efforts were then made by the New York government to cause a temporary cessation of hostilities between the Five Nations and the Indians of Canada, and Frontenac found his country too exhausted to undertake an invasion of Indian territory during the year 'ninety-seven. At the close of the year the Peace of Ryswick ended the struggle between the French and English in Europe and America. Frontenac, however, refused to cease hostilities against the Five Nations unless they agreed to negotiate a separate peace with him. He claimed that the Iroquois were subjects of France, and that as long as they adhered to the English they were rebels, and should be treated as such. Besides this, he was offended because Fletcher did not write when messengers were sent to him with a printed copy of the treaty of peace. To the commissioners who carried him the treaty and also suggested an exchange of prisoners, the obstinate French Governor insisted that the Five Nations were French subjects by right of discovery, and also by the occupancy of their country by forts and missions. He signified his readiness to return English prisoners, but declined to give up the Iroquois, until their deputies should come and make peace with him, as had been promised by some of their sachems. The commissioners contended that as a free and independent people, the Five Nations had placed themselves and their country under English protection and had always been recognized as English subjects and allies. But their words had no effect on the Governor of Canada, and the question remained unsettled for many years after the treaty of Ryswick.

Colonel Fletcher had not been long in New York before he convinced the home government that in order to defend the colony

and to inspire the Indian allies with confidence in his ability to do so, and thus hold them to their allegiance to the English alliance, it was necessary in some way to secure the assistance of other colonies. This conviction led to his appointment as royal Governor of Pennsylvania a few months after his arrival in New York, and to his appointment as commander-in-chief of the forces of Connecticut the following summer.

The defence of New York was not, however, the only cause which led to the appointment of a royal Governor in Pennsylvania. The security of that province itself, it was thought, demanded it. William Penn was at that time in England and had been there since the Revolution of 1688. He had been charged with maintaining treasonable relations with James II., and had even been tried on the charge; although his trial failed to disclose any evidence against him, he seems to have remained under the surveillance of the government as an object of suspicion, and was apparently not allowed to embark for America.

In Fletcher's commission constituting him royal Governor it was alleged that the disorder and confusion resulting from the neglect of the government of the province and the absence of the proprietor were such as endangered the public peace and administration of justice. It was claimed that no provision was made for the defense of the colony against the French, so that both it and the adjacent colonies were in danger of being lost to the crown. The power that Fletcher possessed in New York was given to him in Pennsylvania, and he was commanded to appoint a lieutenant-governor, to whom was given power to execute whatever he was authorized by the Governor to do. Fletcher was also given authority during the war between England and France to draw out and command any part of the militia of East and West Jersey, not exceeding seven hundred men at one time, for the defense of New York. In case of his death or absence, if none else was commissioned to be commander-in-chief, the Council of New York was to administer the government in Pennsylvania as in New York.

Conditions existing in the Quaker province did not furnish a promising outlook for the royal governor. The proprietor had permitted the executive power to be curtailed to such an extent that efficient administration was impossible. The Council was

an elective body, and had the exclusive right of initiating legislation. It also had the power to call and dissolve the General Assembly. This body simply prepared amendments to bills laid before it by the Council and approved or rejected such bills. The Governor did not possess the right to veto, nor could he perform an executive act without the consent of the Council. He could not adjourn the Council. At the time of Fletcher's appointment the Council was the executive, and elected its own president. With the coming of the royal Governor, of course, the elective was superseded by one appointed by the Governor. It naturally followed from this state of affairs that the representative of the crown met the opposition of a large and powerful element, even if he did not find the entire people antagonistic. The absent proprietor, too, who certainly could not be expected to acquiesce quietly in the transfer of right of government to the royal Governor of New York, urged his friends to influence the people to insist upon their rights under the patent of the proprietor. Penn assured the people that any protest they might make against Fletcher's proceedings would be heard not only by Lords of Plantations, but by the king and council as well. He chose to consider that Fletcher's commission was granted as the result of misinformation in regard to the State of Pennsylvania. He desired them to declare that the situation of the province made French invasion impossible.

Fletcher arrived in Philadelphia in April, 1693. He at once proceeded to organize the government on the new basis. Opposition manifested itself immediately, and was first shown by the late deputy governor's refusal to accept the first place in the Council which the Governor offered him. Later, he found it difficult to fill minor positions with satisfactory officials, so general was the feeling that the Governor himself was an intruder.

One of Fletcher's first acts was to issue a call for a meeting of the General Assembly, and on May 15, twenty representatives, the full quota for the six counties, met in Philadelphia. Of this number, only six took the oath of office, the remainder subscribing the declaration of fidelity. The Governor cautioned them that the privilege of not swearing was to be entered in the Assembly journal as an act of grace from the king and queen and not to be regarded as a precedent. As soon as the House was organized

and had chosen its speaker, the whole body of representatives presented themselves before the Governor and Council. The Governor then made a brief address, in which he reminded them that a government must be supported to be effective, and also called their attention to the queen's letter, in which she expressed a desire that all the colonies should contribute assistance to New York. Bearing in mind the Quaker abhorrence of war, he told them if they had scruples about giving money for purposes of war, there were other ways in which money might be used, and that their money should be applied to those purposes, and not dipt in blood. At the second meeting of the Assembly, the conflict between that body and the Governor was begun by the speaker's reading an address of the freemen in which they requested that their proceedings in legislation might be according to the usual method and laws of the government founded upon the late king's letters patent, which they conceived to be still in force, and desired the same confirmed to them as their rights and liberties. Fletcher told them if the laws were in force, they needed no confirmation from him, and wished them to consider by what power they were convened. "There is nothing left for you," he said, "but to own the king's authority or to disown it. There cannot be two establishments of government in opposition to each other." He urged the case at considerable length, trying to make the representatives comprehend that Mr. Penn's government was at an end, and the royal power supreme in the colony. He endeavored to win their cooperation by assuring them of his readiness to concur with them in doing anything that would conduce to their safety, prosperity, and satisfaction, provided their requests were consistent with the laws of England. He urged them to avoid unnecessary debate and to proceed at once to a consideration of the business for which they had been called. In vain, however, did he attempt to convince the hard-headed Quakers of royal supremacy, or to communicate his own hurry and impatience to the Assembly. He cajoled, admonished, and berated them, all to no purpose. With exasperating meekness but bull-dog tenacity they clung to their own methods and pursued their own course. They were determined to secure from their unwelcome executive a confirmation of their laws, or to spend the entire session in the effort to do so. Fletcher maintained that





Automobile Trip Thursday Afternoon — Looking Back Towards Bear Mountain Inn.



many of their laws were in opposition to the laws of England. The Assembly retorted that many reasonable and wholesome laws had been transmitted to England in accordance with the provisions of the Charter, that they had not been declared void by the late king nor his successors, nor repealed by the legislature, and therefore they were still in force. Furthermore, they contended, these laws were recognized by Fletcher's commission in the words which authorized him to execute all things according to such reasonable laws and statutes as were then in force. Fletcher answered by making a request for the roll of the laws, at the same time informing the speaker that he understood they had never been transmitted to England. Members of the Council then made a formal demand of the rolls of the former laws of the province of the late keeper of the rolls. To this demand the keeper replied that he had never enrolled any laws, that he never had any warrant for so doing.

The Assembly contended that the reasons alleged by the king of Fletcher's commission for superseding the proprietor's government were founded upon misrepresentation. Courts of justice, they claimed, were open in all the counties and justice properly administered, and the province, they said, in no danger of being lost to the crown. Fletcher again reminded them that their laws were not consonant to the laws of England and that they had not been duly executed, and as to the security of the province, he declared, "It is obvious to any discerning man that less than five hundred soldiers may reduce it in as little time as they can march through it."

The quarrel dragged on, and finally it was clearly ascertained that only a few of the laws had ever been properly enrolled. They had not been published under the proprietor's seal. A member of the House complained that it was hard that all their court proceedings and other similar matters should be void simply for want of form. The Governor suggested that the remedy lay in two lines of an act which he would readily pass. The member replied that they dared not begin to pass one bill of their former laws, lest by so doing they should declare the rest void.

After a long and tedious attempt to find a basis for agreement, and when both parties had exhausted their resources, a joint committee of members of the Council and House consulted with Lieu-

tenant-Governor Markham, who was also a member of the committee from the Council. Markham admitted that he was present at the passing of all the laws, and that as Secretary of the province he had the original bills of the laws in his possession, and he averred that he believed the copy which they offered in evidence was a true copy. The only question which now remained was the matter of legal form. The laws had not been published under the seal of the proprietor. Of this fact the committee from the Council was inclined to make the most, while the members from the House tried to minimize the importance of a mere matter of form. The joint committee then read the entire list of laws and selected a number which they advised the Governor to order executed. This he immediately did. After the former laws were thus disposed of, the Assembly proceeded to legislative business. It passed a bill for erecting a post-office, and one against privateering, but this not being passed according to the form drawn up at Whitehall, Fletcher refused to allow it to become a law. Then a bill was passed giving one penny in the pound to the English sovereigns.

On the first of June the Assembly was dissolved at its own request, and the Governor returned to New York, leaving Lieutenant-Governor Markham and the Council in charge of the government. At the same time he instructed Colonel Lodiwick, his special representative to England for the purpose of giving a full account of conditions in New York, to declare that no assistance at all can be expected from Pennsylvania, as the people are mostly Quakers and will give neither men nor money for war; nothing can be hoped for, unless their majesties shall please to join that government to New York, then New York can outvote them.

In May, 1694, Governor Fletcher made another effort to negotiate with the obstinate peace-lovers of Pennsylvania. He called another Assembly to meet in Philadelphia for the express purpose of providing for the defence of New York. But notwithstanding the fact that he had urged the members of the Council to use their influence to secure the election of men favorable to his views, he found the new Assembly quite as recalcitrant as the former body. The representatives chose to consider that the Assembly of the previous year had suitably responded to the queen's call for assistance for New York by the levy of the penny

in the pound. They presented a remonstrance to the Governor in which they expressed the opinion that the seven hundred sixty pounds so levied was quite sufficient for their contribution. They also declared that the Governor had misrepresented them in his conference with the Five Nations at Albany. The members of the Assembly were severely reprimanded by Fletcher for attempting to transcend their powers. He would not allow them to choose their own collector. The appointing power, he claimed, belonged to him. He forbade them to levy county rates, because he declared it to be repugnant to the laws of England. After a stormy session of no profit, the second Assembly was dissolved, on the ninth of June. Both Assemblies had treated the crown's representative with little consideration, and tenaciously upheld their former laws and customs. In fact, they occupied the rather unique position of Democratic sentinels guarding the portals of a feudal principality.

In August of the same year, the Lords of Trade reported that, although the proprietor's authority had been lawfully superseded for the reasons mentioned in Colonel Fletcher's commission, when those reasons failed, the right of government reverted to Mr. Penn, who had petitioned to have it restored to him. Therefore, in consideration of his promise to provide for the security of the province and to subscribe to the declaration of fidelity, they recommended that he be restored to the administration of the government and that such part of Governor Fletcher's commission as related to Pennsylvania be revoked, but with directions to the restored proprietor that upon application of the Governor of New York a quota of not exceeding eighty men, or the value of the charge thereof, should be furnished by Pennsylvania for the defence of New York.

So far as the purpose for which Fletcher had been appointed Governor was concerned, there was little result, but the introduction of the forms of the royal province left a permanent impress upon the province itself in the change made in both the Council and Assembly. In the charter of privileges of 1701, the complete independence of the Assembly and its sole right to initiate legislation were conceded. Henceforth the members of the Council were appointed by the executive power, their function was to act as an advisory body to the Governor, and they exercised only administrative power. Thus a large part of the executive

power which had been placed in the hands of the people by the experiment of the elective council was now retained by the Executive.

The urgent need of assistance for New York led the crown to appoint Governor Fletcher commander-in-chief of the forces in Connecticut. His commission stated as the reason for the appointment the proximity of Connecticut and the possibility of her granting expeditious assistance as occasion might require during the time of war. Power was given him by his commission to transfer the militia to the province of New York and its frontiers, for the purpose of resisting enemies, pirates, rebels both on land and sea. Referring to his appointment in a letter to the Secretary of State, the Governor expressed the opinion that it would be of great advantage to the service, if he could find a way to make the people raise money for these payments. "Daily complaints," he said, "come to me from that colony of the arbitrary, tyrannical proceedings of those republicans." But Fletcher was soon to find that the corporate colony of Connecticut was not more favorably inclined to royal interference than had been the proprietary province of Pennsylvania. In October he visited Hartford, for the purpose of securing the recognition of his authority by the publication of his commission. Governor Treat refused to hear the commission, and when Fletcher ordered his own secretary to read it, he was met by a request on the part of the General Court to have the charter of the colony read. Fletcher replied that he was not concerned with the charter or the civil power, but was to command the militia. Then the Governor and Secretary desired him to suspend the execution of his commission until they could hear from the king through their agent, Major Winthrop, who had already been sent to England to represent the opposition of the colony to Fletcher's appointment. This proposition was emphatically declined. After further consideration the General Court notified their unwelcome guest that they did not understand that his commission by express words superseded the commission for the militia in their charter, nor had they received any order from the king to surrender the same. Therefore, they continued, it was their intention to continue the militia as formerly until they heard from the sovereigns through their agent. They assured him that in obedience to the home government they were ready on all just

occasions to assist the Governor of New York in the defence of that province against the common enemy in proportion with the neighboring colonies. Fletcher exerted himself to the utmost to make the Connecticut authorities comprehend and acknowledge the basis of his claim to command the militia, but without success. They positively refused to admit the royal supremacy. In vain he tried to conciliate them by tendering Governor Treat a commission for the command of all the militia in the colony. His efforts to convince them that he had neither the intention nor the power to invade any of their royal rights were futile. The correspondence and interviews between him and the General Court continued for many days, but Fletcher was compelled to withdraw from the colony without securing the recognition of his commission. In a letter to Mr. Southwell written about the time of his departure, he said, "I have been in this colony twenty days, laboring to persuade a stubborn people to do their duty. I published their majesties' commission in their General Court at Hartford, but they refused all obedience. They have separated not only from the Church, but from the crown of England, and allow of no appeal from their courts, nor the laws of England to have any force among them. Some of the wisest have said, 'We are not permitted to vote for any members of Parliament and therefore are not amenable to their laws'." None of the officials, he declared, had taken the oath of allegiance or subscribed the test. He concluded by advising the annexation of Connecticut to New York, and even referred to certain men who represented the Tory faction as desirable councillors.

In the meantime, Major Winthrop, who had been sent to England to plead the charter rights of the colony to command its own militia, had proved himself an able diplomat. In the petition presented by him it was said that Fletcher demanded not only that the colony should yield to him as lieutenant-general over the full quota of the militia of the colony, which they were always ready to do, but likewise that the colony should surrender to him their power of assessing, modeling, and establishing the militia granted to them by their charter, and that he had likewise endeavored by several artifices to insinuate himself into the civil government of the colony. After considering the petition, the attorney and solicitor-general reported that the charters gave the ordinary

power of the militia to the respective governments, but expressed the opinion that the crown might constitute a chief commander who might have authority at all times to command such proportion of the forces of each colony as they thought fit, and in times of invasion, with the consent and advice of the governors, might command the rest of the forces for the defence of such of the colonies as should most stand in need therefore. Winthrop then desired that the Governor of New York be directed not to draw out more of the quota appointed for the colony of Connecticut than in proportion with that which at the same time he should draw out of the other colonies; namely, Massachusetts, Rhode Island, Pennsylvania, East and West Jersey, Virginia and Maryland. Upon reading Winthrop's memorial, the lords agreed that a clause should be inserted in the latter to be prepared for the queen's signature, accordingly. This was done, and the queen immediately communicated the directions to the Governor of New York. This arrangement, however, did not end the trouble between the New York Executive and the colony of Connecticut. In the spring of 'ninety-six, Fletcher wrote the General Court that he desired them to send sixty men to Albany to be supported by New York. The Governor and Council of Connecticut replied that they would send fifty-eight men and two officers until the following autumn, unless Connecticut should be invaded in the meantime. They desired him to send arms, ammunition and provisions to Milford, so that the soldiers might be ready to march from that place. The clerk of the New York Council immediately notified the General Court that Governor Fletcher expected them to send the men to Albany at the charge of Connecticut, and that he would provide officers for them. He reminded them that the Governor's commission for the command of the Connecticut militia was not repealed and that the power of appointing officers was lodged solely in him. Fletcher received word in reply, that if he was not willing to supply them at Milford, and allow them their own officers, the men would be very unwilling to march to Albany. They also reminded him that he did not mention neighboring colonies' quotas that he had summoned.

The Connecticut authorities not only continued to be jealous of Fletcher's limited power over their militia, but were apparently never willing to trust either his integrity or his judgment.

If the demands which he made of them did not seem to them reasonable, they virtually refused compliance. They did, indeed, contribute both men and money to the assistance of New York, but they always insisted upon making their own terms. Towards the close of Fletcher's administration their relations seem to have become more amicable. But the Puritan colony never made any semblance of yielding the principles for which it so successfully contended, and if Governor Fletcher correctly reported their independent spirit, the essence of the claim that taxation without representation is tyranny probably emanated from Connecticut.

An object of great solicitude to Governor Fletcher was the proper establishment of the Church of England in the province. Previous to his coming, the state church had obtained but little recognition. The Episcopal service was first celebrated in New York in 1664 by the Chaplain of the English forces, after the surrender of the Dutch. There was no place for the holding of the service except the Dutch church, and arrangements were made by which the British chaplain read the Church of England service to the Governor and garrison after the Dutch had ended their own worship. When Governor Dongan came over, 1683, he was accompanied by an Episcopal chaplain of the soldiers in New York. In 1686, when Dongan became royal Governor he was instructed to see that the sacrament was administered according to the rites of the Church of England, and it was ordered that the ecclesiastical jurisdiction of the Archbishop of Canterbury should prevail throughout New York, in everything but collating to benefices, granting licenses for marriage, and the probate of wills.

It is worthy of note that the Episcopal Church was first given a recognized standing in New York through the instructions of a Roman Catholic king to a Roman Catholic royal Governor. For thirty years after the service was first celebrated here, the little Dutch church in the fort was the only place of worship. Apparently there was no great demand for the Episcopal service. As late as 1687, Dongan reported that there were few Church of England people in the province. After enumerating a list of dissenters, he concluded, "Of all sorts of opinion, there are some, and the most part of none at all." The liberal policy of the

Dutch settlers had made the colony heterogeneous in population, and cosmopolitan in character from the beginning.

It is interesting to note the significance of the character of the instructions in ecclesiastical matters issued to the royal Governors. We find the Romanist James and the Dutch Calvinist William issuing precisely the same instructions to their deputies in regard to the establishment of the State Church of England, thus emphasizing not only the close connection of Church and State, but the recognition of the inherent conservative strength of the English people.

The prevailing religious opinion of the inhabitants at this time was Dutch Calvinist, and that had been the state church before the conquest of New Netherlands. Now, inasmuch as one-half of the people were Dutch, and one-fourth French Protestants, it is not difficult to understand that as soon as representative government was re-established a clash between the royal Governor and the Assembly in regard to the establishment of the English Church became inevitable. The dispute began in the Assembly of 1691. The House, on the recommendation of the Governor to introduce a bill for settling a ministry, instructed the attorney-general to prepare such a bill, which they at once rejected, probably because it provided for the establishment of the Church of England in conformity with the Governor's instructions.

Governor Fletcher's instructions in regard to the Church of England and the jurisdiction of the Bishop of London were similar to those of his predecessors. He, however, endeavored more earnestly than any one before him to carry out the instructions fully. He recommended to his first Assembly the establishment of a ministry, and in September, 'ninety-three, an act was passed for that purpose, but it did not expressly establish the Church of England. It provided that a good, sufficient, Protestant minister should be called within a year in the city of New York, one in Richmond, two in Westchester, and two in Queens. Ten vestrymen and two church wardens should be chosen annually by all the freeholders, and the wardens should pay the minister's stipend in quarterly instalments. Under this act the Rev. John Miller, chaplain of the troops in the fort, and the only Church of England clergyman in the colony, claimed the right to be inducted into the living of New York. Fletcher



agreed to this, but was opposed by the Council. This Mr. Miller, like many other gentlemen of leisure, had theories in abundance. He urged the conversion of the Indians, wished the king to send over a bishop, and by way of temporal diversion, he desired that the conquest of Canada should be made.

In January, 1694, wardens and vestrymen were elected by the freeholders of the town. All except three were dissenters, and they proceeded to draw a resolution to the effect that a dissenting minister be called for the city. The following year another board was elected, with the dissenters still in the majority. The Governor's impatience at the long delay in calling a minister led this board to extend a call to a Mr. Vesey on Long Island, but as neither the Governor nor the dissenting element was satisfied, it seems that Mr. Vesey was not even notified of his appointment. About this time the city vestry appealed to the Assembly to interpret their powers under the act of 'ninety-three. The Assembly unhesitatingly assumed judicial powers, and declared that the vestrymen and church wardens have power to call a dissenting Protestant minister. This declaration excited the Governor's wrath, and drew from him a severe reprimand. He reminded the Assembly that no Protestant church except the Church of England had such officers as church wardens and vestrymen, and told them it was out of their province to explain an act they did not make. The laws, he said were to be interpreted by the judges. It was both the duty and the wish of the Governor to introduce the Church of England as an establishment into the province, and although the act of 'ninety-three was ambiguous, still, if interpreted in accordance with the usages of the day, it would have met his wishes. But the Assembly, composed largely of dissenters, wished to interpret the law in such a way as to meet the approval of the majority of the people.

Fletcher in the meantime had the old church in the fort torn down and secured a sum of money for building a new one; and now a body of influential citizens petitioned the Governor for license to purchase a small piece of land lying without the north gate of the city, between the king's garden and the burying place for the site of the church which it was proposed to build. They also wished authority to receive voluntary contributions for the church. The petition was, of course, granted; and soon after, the city vestry which had been elected in the spring of 'ninety-six, the third

board elected since the passage of the act, extended a call to the same Mr. Vesey above referred to. This call was accepted, and the minister-elect repaired to England for ordination. During his absence the friends of the church applied to the Governor for an act of incorporation in conformity with the ministry act of 'ninety-three, the exclusive benefit of which they desired to have applied to the Church of England. By that charter, the parish of Trinity was established, and in December of 'ninety-seven, the Governor had the pleasure of inducting Mr. Vesey into office. As the English church was not ready for use, the ceremony was performed in the new Dutch church in Garden Street, and for three months Dominie Selyns and the Episcopal minister preached alternately in this church. This Dutch Church had received a charter the year before. The Governor granted this new church a lease of the piece of land known as the king's farm. It had once been the property of Lovelace, and was now a perquisite of the royal Governor. He also provided the Bible and other books. This first home of the Church of England in New York was an object of great interest to Bishop Compton, Bishop of London, who was made the first rector by King William. He secured for it communion plate and furniture and contributed a large number of books.

An amusing story is told in connection with Mr. Vesey. It is said that he was a graduate of Harvard College, educated under Increase Mather and sent by him to preserve the New Englanders who had removed to New York from contamination by the Church of England minister in the fort. But Colonel Fletcher, the story continues, circumvented Mather by calling his protégé to the living in New York, and, as if this was not malicious enough, it is added that the Governor succeeded by a promise to advance his stipend considerably, and to recommend him for holy orders to the Bishop of London.

One of Governor Fletcher's last acts in the province was to dispose of his pew in Trinity Church, and the act is not without its significance. The pew was assigned to three of his friends in the Council, to other councillors who held no pews, and to persons of quality traveling in the city.

A question of great importance during Fletcher's administration was the commercial relation of the colonies to the home coun-

try. In order to comprehend the bearing of the different acts relating to trade as they affected the interests of both England and the colonies, it is necessary first to understand the real purpose of the existence of a colony from the standpoint of the English government. This purpose was clearly indicated in the navigation act of 1651, which was the first statutory embodiment of the regular traditional policy. According to the theory of which this was the concrete expression, the colonies existed to benefit the commerce of England. Whatever efforts might be made to compensate them by allowing bounties on exports, still by this theory they were placed in a permanently subordinate position. The interests of the dependencies were not to be permitted to conflict with those of England.

Now, it was this bold theory of colonial dependence, first clearly enunciated in the navigation act of the commonwealth and afterward reenacted under the third Stuart, which guided British colonial policy for more than a century, indeed until the successful resistance of the Federal colonies established their independence. It would be a mistake to infer from this that England's colonial policy was more tyrannical than that of other colonizing countries of Europe. It was perhaps the mildest of any of them. It was simply in accordance with the theory of the age in regard to the purpose of colonies.

The attempt to enforce the navigation act, and the acts of trade in general in the colonies, afforded a very thorough test of the administrative ability of the provincial governors. To the governors of royal provinces the instructions of the sovereigns were explicit in regard to trade, and more explicit from William than from any of his predecessors, as he relied more fully upon the merchant class, an element especially benefited by the enforcement of the trade acts. Greater care was also exercised by him in the appointment of custom house officers. In 1696, a special committee for Trade and Plantations in America was appointed to examine into trade relations. One of the principal duties of the commissioners was to require the provincial governors to supply them with all possible information. Notwithstanding, however, the increased care taken to guard the commercial interests of England, it seems to be a well-established fact that the trade acts were very generally evaded or ignored. In the proprietary

provinces and the corporate colonies, where there were no representatives of the crown, we should naturally expect to find an attitude of indifference, but it might be presumed that in the royal provinces, the officials of the home government would vigorously oppose any infringements of an act in the interest of England. We must understand, however, that the interests of England were believed to be opposed to the welfare of the colonists, who could not be expected to accept graciously the subordinate position assigned them when it involved pecuniary loss.

Now, however loyally disposed a royal Governor might be, he found it necessary to recognize a large class who opposed trade restrictions. His position, we readily realize, was an embarrassing one, and the manner in which he met the requirements placed upon him was determined largely by the strength and integrity of the individual man. There is no reason to doubt the good intention of Benjamin Fletcher in regard to the enforcement of the trade acts at the beginning of his administration. A few months after his arrival in the province, in a letter to Mr. Blathwayt, auditor-general, he discussed general trade conditions in the colony, which were somewhat complicated. There was the fur trade with the Indians, the trade regulated by acts of the colonial legislature, and the trade with foreign countries, which Parliament attempted to control by the navigation act and the long series of trade acts. Fletcher wrote Mr. Blathwayt that the fur trade was quite lost, and that neighboring colonies robbed New York of all regular trade, by failing to levy any duties. He declared the navigation act was neither observed nor valued by those colonies. In another communication to the auditor-general, after detailing the hard conditions existing in the province, he concluded by asserting that the only remedy lay in adding Connecticut and some other colonies to New York, when they would be compelled to pay equal duties to the crown. "Acts of navigation," he said, "are wholly violated by these outlyers." There is further evidence that Fletcher did at least comply to a certain extent with the king's instructions in regard to trade, for we find William Penn, as a proprietor of East Jersey, complaining before the Committee of Trades and Plantations, in 1696, that the Governor of New York obliged ships that came thither with goods from

England to pay New York customs. He was promptly informed that Colonel Fletcher was ordered to do so by his instructions, and reminded that if goods were received there free of duty, they might be clandestinely transported into New York. Fletcher had been instructed by the king to allow no goods to pass up the Hudson but such as had paid New York duties.

The clearly expressed intention of the king to make the trade of New Jersey contribute to the support of New York, and the attempt of the royal Governor to carry out these instructions to that effect gave rise to a long struggle between the two colonies. The Jerseys finally endeavored to get free ports, Perth Amboy in East Jersey and Burlington in West Jersey. In 1697, the attorney and solicitor-general reported to the Lords of Trade that ports were to be appointed in the plantations by the commissioners of the customs in England under the authority of the Lord Treasurer. This power, it was claimed, had not been granted to the Duke of York, and since he had not received it from the crown, he could not grant it to Berkeley and Carteret. The attorney-general of New York reported to Bellomont, Fletcher's successor, that Perth Amboy should not be a free port, because it was twelve miles nearer to Sandy Hook than New York harbor and, he argued, vessels will never go twenty-four miles to pay duties if they can go only twelve miles, and be free from all duties. About the time when the Jersey authorities were making the greatest clamor for free ports, the Commission of Customs wrote Edward Randolph that customs officers had been appointed at Perth Amboy, but their duties were simply to enforce the navigation act. They were not to interfere with the regular collection of duties by New York customs officials. The dispute was not ended until long after Fletcher's time.

Governor Fletcher's numerous statements in regard to trade may be accepted as proof of his appreciation of the difficulties, at least, even if we are not prepared to admit the unqualified truth of his avowal that the neighboring colonies robbed New York of her trade.

The Earl of Bellomont claimed that the decreased revenue was due to the negligence and corruption of the customs officers. This statement, he declared to be proved by the fact that the customs accounts decreased while at the same time

trade in the port doubled, and the city became rich and populous. As a further proof of the charge, he alleged that his examination of books of entry for every quarter during three years of Fletcher's administration showed that in each of those quarters there had been more entries than in the same period during his time.

He averred that the merchants during his predecessor's time had become so accustomed to breaches of the acts of trade that, when he ordered a seizure of East Indian goods imported in an unfree bottom, the whole city seemed to be in an uproar, and regarded his action as a violent seizing of their property. On one occasion, he says, a man sent by him to seize goods illegally imported, was actually imprisoned, either by the active help or the connivance of the officers whose business it was to make the seizure, and the Governor was compelled to send his Lieutenant-Governor to liberate him. Bellomont frequently complained in letters to England that the collector of the port absolutely refused to make seizures.

Bellomont soon found that the Council had no sympathy with his efforts to enforce the trade acts, and they even threw every possible obstacle in his way. The merchant class was largely represented in this body, and it seems fair to assume that Fletcher's failure was principally due to their influence.

But neglect to enforce the acts of trade was not the worst charge against Governor Fletcher. He was accused of openly encouraging, even protecting pirates. In 1697, the Lords of Trade wrote him to neither entertain nor shelter pirates under the severest penalties. This matter, they say, they recommend more particularly to *his* care, since they had information that his government was named as a place of protection. The Lords of Trade were apparently overwhelmed with complaints against the favorable attitude of the American colonies toward piracy. By the connivance of the colonial governors, a regular system of illegal trade was established between the colonies and the East Indies, Madagascar being the center of operations. Many pirate ships were fitted out and commissioned from New York. These sailed for the East Indies and obtained rich spoils, which they carried to Madagascar. There they were met by merchant ships from this port. These were owned by owners of the pirate ships and were publicly loaded here with goods desired by the pirates, such as liquors,

arms, and ammunition. These cargoes were left in Madagascar and the ships returned home freighted with the wealth of the Orient.

It was claimed that Governor Fletcher sold protection, that is, permission to land at one hundred dollars per man, and that a prominent member of the Council was his chief broker. Upon one occasion, the Governor received a vessel which he sold for eight hundred pounds for granting protection to supposed pirates. The board of trade reported to the justices that they considered depositions made by witnesses proof of protection granted to pirates by Fletcher. Bellomont claimed that his predecessor commissioned unfree bottoms to be privateers. He also accused him of neglecting to appoint a naval officer distinct from the collector, and a register of ships.

It is necessary, however, to sum up the evidence on Fletcher's side. In the first place one of the first bills passed by the Assembly during his administration was the act against pirates and privateers which had been drawn up at Whitehall. He asserted, too, that he had never given protection without the Council's approval, and there seems no reason to doubt this statement. As to the charge against him that he had never prosecuted pirates, he replied that no complaints were made upon which to ground a suit. He affirmed that those to whom he granted protection gave bonds for good behavior. To many, he said, he gave a commission to make war upon the French, and it was no fault of his if they afterward became sea robbers. Privateering, it must be remembered, was then considered perfectly legitimate business, and yet it was only a short step from privateering to piracy.

The Governor's defence may seem weak when viewed in the light of generally well known facts, but it is not so easy to affirm that he did not formally comply with the legal requirements, and it is utterly impossible to suppose that he could have withstood the overwhelming sentiment in favor of illegal trade. It is necessary, too, to consider the prevalence of piracy at that time all over the world and to remember that the great extent of unprotected coast in America and the numerous excellent, unguarded harbors made the country a most desirable base of operation. Fletcher, himself, declared that pirates enriched the charter governments. Rhode Island's claim to admiralty jurisdiction enraged him. The people of that colony he declared gave constant encouragement

to pirates, and he expected faint prosecution. Evidence is not wanting to sustain his charge. Connecticut, too, seems to have extended liberal hospitality to the lawless traders, and a flourishing business was carried on between her shores and Long Island.

As to Fletcher's claim that he associated with pirates for the purpose of reforming them, and entertained them at his home because it was his custom to entertain strangers, ridiculous as it may seem, it is not much more quixotic than the plan to exterminate pirates through the agency of privateers, and to this plan we find even the Calvinist king of England lending his sanction. When Captain Kidd could produce a commission under the great seal of England for suppressing piracy, surely the sovereign's deputy should not be too severely censured for allowing him to man his vessel in the royal province of New York.

Most of the matters of special importance during Governor Fletcher's administration have now been briefly discussed, and in conclusion it remains only to indicate more particularly the relations existing between the Executive and the legislature; that is, the house of representatives, for the Council was generally in accord with the Governor. This body, as we have seen, was composed largely of merchants who were anti-Leislerian, or Tory, in politics.

We have, then, this body of Tory merchants and the aristocratic Governor on one side, and on the other, the representatives of the people. Friction between them developed early and continued long, during almost the entire administration. The Executive needed money to carry on the government. It was necessary to keep a large garrison at the frontier post of Albany and as volunteers were not numerous, the Governor was forced to send up large detachments of militia. This was not a popular measure. The money for the support of these soldiers, both volunteers and militia, as well as for other administrative purposes, had to be raised by taxes voted by the legislature. The representatives of the poverty-stricken people were naturally in sympathy with their constituents, and endeavored to make their burden of taxation as light as possible. As the people of the province had had very slight experience in affairs of government, and







Automobile Drive Through Palisades Park, Thursday Afternoon.

the Executive no experience at all, it must be supposed that errors of judgment were frequent on both sides. The legislators considered the Governor's continual demand for money a real grievance, while the Governor became impatient of what to him was simply studied perverseness. They accused him of misappropriating funds; he retorted that the books were open for inspection. Often the Governor became oblivious to the dignity of his position and treated the house of representatives after the manner of an old-fashioned pedagogue. The relations between the two departments of government were what in the very nature of things they must have been. The inexperience of both, the extreme poverty of the province, the vexed problems of war, the consciousness that their government was defending neighboring colonies who withheld needed assistance—all these things tended to complicate the situation, and to increase the irritation of both the Governor and the Assembly. The whole story is pitiable, but amusing and instructive.

Aside from the opposition to the Governor which developed in his relations with the Assembly and which had its origin in the attempted solution of intricate administrative questions, there was from the very beginning of his administration a strong faction, the Leislerian Whigs, who would have opposed him from political motives, alone. A man of judgment and tact might, however, have disarmed this opposition to a considerable extent by judicious management. But Fletcher invited their ill-will by his unconcealed partisanship. It must not be supposed that he consciously offended, but as he was not a man of fine feeling nor capable of making nice distinctions, even his well-meant efforts to reconcile the two factions only resulted in their further estrangement and in increased antipathy toward himself on the part of the Leislerians. Politically and socially they considered him an ally of their enemies. That they had sufficient cause can not be denied.

Fletcher seems to have very imperfectly understood the king's directions in regard to those imprisoned and under sentence of death. Being ordered to liberate them, he made the mistake of advising them to apply for pardon, and foolishly promised to exert himself to procure it. When they were set free, instead of considering their liberty a favor, they had the

perversity to justify the conduct which had led to their imprisonment, and to consider themselves entitled to all the rights of citizenship. Some of them were even bold enough to allow themselves to be elected to the Assembly, and this the Governor frankly confessed, in a letter to England, that he could not suffer.

One of the liberated men went to Massachusetts, where he was well received by Governor Phipps, and while there wrote a letter to a friend in which he represented the Massachusetts Governor as having referred to the Council of New York as the "old King James Council that must be put out," and to Governor Fletcher as "a poor beggar who sought nothing but money." This letter was intercepted by Fletcher and he then demanded of Phipps that he should return the writer as a fugitive from justice, and as a vindication of himself, for, he reminded him, if he had written the words attributed to him, he had forgotten not only his duty to the king, but his manners to gentlemen. Phipps replied that Fletcher's ignorance caused him to misinterpret the letter, and that if he had forgotten his manners to gentlemen, he had forgotten what the New York executive never had. After such amenities, we should expect a hitch in diplomatic relations, and we find the two royal governors wrangling over the possession of Martha's Vineyard until an intercolonial war seemed imminent. The threatened collision was averted, however, and Colonel Fletcher was left to face foes nearer home. Among these was a former official of the province, who claimed to have loaned the government large sums of money. The Governor professed to believe that this man had enriched himself at the expense of the province. But Livingston had influential friends in England, and his account of Fletcher's shortcomings contributed largely to secure his recall.

The charges against him were numerous and varied. Aside from those already mentioned in regard to his connivance at illegal trade, and the encouragement extended to pirates, he was accused of converting great sums of public money to his own use, of fomenting the feud between Leislerians and anti-Leislerians, of deducting one-half penny per diem out of each private soldier's subsistence, of sending home full muster rolls, when the companies were reduced one-half, of dividing the people

by supposing a Dutch and an English interest to be different here, of granting away land in tracts almost as large as Yorkshire to people of no merit without placing them under obligation to settle the land so granted, and for entirely inadequate quit rents. One grant was seventy miles long and eight miles wide; others fifty by thirty.

He was accused of forcing electors to choose representatives who were agreeable to himself, of influencing elections by intimidation and forcing soldiers and seamen to vote. He appointed one sheriff for New York and Orange Counties, and it was claimed that this official refused to allow freeholders in Orange to vote. The Governor's enemies even declared that he imprisoned those who would have reported his misdeeds in England and accused him of boasting of his influence at Whitehall, which would be sufficient to offset any complaints that might be made against him. It was said that he threatend the assessors with imprisonment for not assessing the inhabitants higher, that the Indians resented his neglect of them, and that the fortifications were not kept up. It was even pretended that the Indians named him the Great Swift Arrow for his vain-glory. Because they understood the name Fletcher to be the name of a trade, of an arrow-maker, they bestowed the name upon him as a sarcastic pun.

Bellomont, who was an intense partisan of the Leislerian faction, seems to have heeded every idle rumor afloat concerning his predecessor, and to have communicated them to England in an exaggerated form, even if he did not actually invent charges. There is no doubt that many of the charges were utterly false, and others absurdly distorted.

Fletcher said, he could produce five hundred persons in New York who would aver they never heard any of the reports until they heard them from England. Much of the testimony given against him before the Committee of Trade and Plantations was utterly worthless. The following case is typical: one sea captain had testified that the sheriff of New York had desired him to get out the people on board his vessel, they being inhabitants of the province, to vote for such persons as the Governor desired should be elected, but he readily admitted that he had no knowledge that it was by the Governor's order.

Perhaps the most serious charge against Fletcher was the granting of large tracts of land carelessly, but his defense was that the grantees had rendered very great services to the province, and in many cases this was undeniably true.

Schuyler, in his *Colonial New York*, says, "Whatever else may be said of Governor Fletcher, it may be said with truth, that he was one of the most active and energetic men who occupied the executive chair in colonial times. He made himself thoroughly acquainted with the affairs of the province, its wants and burdens." This statement is thoroughly proved by the sources.

Cadwallader Colden says, "I find several instances in the history of New York which show that Colonel Fletcher pursued the interest of his country with zeal, and I discovered no want of talent, unless it be, that he seemed not to have studied much the art of cajoling an Assembly! I cannot discover the least instance of Colonel Fletcher's avarice. Surely his thanking the Assembly, and at the same time refusing a present of five hundred pounds to himself and five hundred more to be distributed among the officers and soldiers, is not told as an instance of his avarice; nor is his contributing largely to the building of Trinity Church another instance." Referring to Smith's calling Fletcher a bigot, he says, "Popular republican writers know the force of epithets with superficial readers, and never neglect the use of them." He exonerates Fletcher from any real connection with illegal commerce, and expresses the opinion that it would have been very difficult for him to put a stop to it, where there were so many harbors, and where the temptations to concealment were so great.

Very little is known of Benjamin Fletcher previous to his coming to America, beyond the fact that he had served in the English army in both Holland and Ireland. But if we do not know the man, we know his time, and it is manifestly unfair to judge a man by any other standard than that of the time in which he lived. Yet, even if we admit that the standard of both morality and intelligence was never much lower in modern England than about the middle of the seventeenth century, still Fletcher probably fell below the standard of his age. From the fact that his trial in England after his recall from New York resulted in little more than implied censure, we are not at liberty to infer that the evidence against him did

not afford so strong a presumption of guilt as to make it almost a certainty, but rather that the attitude of the judges toward the kind of offense with which he was charged was very lenient. Enough has already been said about his utter lack of every kind of preparation for the vice-regal office, and while this tends to explain failure so far as efficient administration is concerned, it does not excuse the gross frauds of which it is almost certain that he was guilty. These could be perpetrated only by one lacking in moral stamina.

It is perfectly natural that Church of England people should be inclined to judge leniently one who made himself so conspicuous and earnest a champion of Episcopacy, but we should expect a middle class Tory to exert himself in the service of the State Church. His devotion to the Church cannot, indeed, be allowed special weight as evidence in his favor, nor can his protestations of loyalty to the crown. These we should expect. He must stand or fall upon the charge of malfeasance in office, and while the evidence from the records was not considered sufficient to establish his guilt legally, it seems to justify the severest censure from an ethical point of view.

ALICE DAVIS.

---

## BIBLIOGRAPHY

### *Primary Sources*

- New York Colonial Documents*, Vols. III and IV.  
*Journal of the Legislative Council of New York*. Vol. I.  
*Journal of the General Assembly of New York*. Vol. I.  
*Colonial Laws of New York*. Vol. I.  
*Colonial Records of Pennsylvania*. Vol. I.  
*Colonial Records of Connecticut*. Vol. III.

### *Secondary Sources.*

- Smith's *History of New York*. Vol. I.  
Brodhead's *History of New York*. Vol. II.  
Schuyler's *Colonial New York*.  
Proud's *History of Pennsylvania*.  
Trumbull's *History of Connecticut*.

Perry's *History of American Episcopal Church*.

Dix's *History of Trinity Church*.

Long's *History of Jamaica*.

Greene's *The Provincial Governor*.

Doyle's *English Colonies in America*. Vol. III.

Weeden's *Social and Economic History of New England*.

*American Historical Review*. Vols. II and III.

Parkman's *Works*. Vol. X.

Winsor's *Narrative and Critical History of America*, Vol. V.



## JOSEPH AVERY'S JOURNAL, 1799

The following is the journal of Joseph Avery a Presbyterian Minister who was born on April 13, 1743. Living at a small place called Tyringham in Berkshire County, Massachusetts, he left his home on horseback on Tuesday, June 11, 1799 and went into the Genesee Country for the purpose of forming churches and administering to the religious welfare of the new inhabitants of that region. The journal ends with his arrival at Greenbush upon his return trip and the reader is left to guess whether or not he continued on to Tyringham, his starting place. This account of his experiences covering a period of exactly three months is contained in a small pamphlet of 32 pages without covers and in size, 3-1/2" x 6", the narrative evidently written by Mr. Avery himself.

S. D. VAN ALSTINE

### JOURNAL—1799—TUESDAY

June 11. Afternoon 1 o'clock sat out on my tour, after taking leave of several of my own people under Great Trouble of Mind, who lay in my way. Rode as far as Alford. Lodged at Wm. Brunsons, Esq.

June 12. Called on some friends in Town who had relatives in Genesee who would naturally enquire after their welfare; being interrupted in my progress by the rain, rode only 10 miles to Spencertown; took dinner with Mr. Porter; being still showery rode in the afternoon to Strongs 16 or 17 miles Schodack.

June 13. Rode about 36 miles to Hillebruck by the way of Albana, and the glass-works. Had a conference toward night and in the evening with a few friends. Very agreeably. One young woman in the company was under some serious concern. Made an appointment to preach here on my return.

June 14. Called on some acquaintance in my way to Schoharie 12 (miles); from there to Cobles Kill and on through Sharon to

the New State Road 24 miles. Here I heard my brother's daughter on Bomas Creek was at the point of death with a bleeding from the lungs. Put up here for the night.

June 15. Rode to my brother's on the creek; found my brother's daughter in better condition than I expected. Left them about 10 o'clock; rode 16 miles to Sharon. Here they were destitute of preaching; proposed tarrying here over the Sabbath there being a collection of people from different parts of the Town on Publick business, notice was given; but in the evening, information came to my quarter that a gentleman from the York Presbytery was came into town to give them a supply.

June 16. Lord's Day.—Rode 26 miles to Litchfield; preached two sermons, one at 2 o'clock at a meeting of the Congregationals, in the south part of the town, at 5 at the place of the Baptist meeting in the North part. Spent the evening with Christian friends.

June 17. Rode to Rev'd Mr. Steels 10 miles; took dinner with him. Rode on 12 miles to Judge Deans; called on Rev'd Mr. Norton and other friends. Visited my daughter. Tarried all night.

June 18. Rode 8 miles to my sons on the Oneida Reservation; visited friends in the afternoon.

June 19. Rode on toward Genesee to Cobs Tavern 25 miles.

June 20. Rode 26 miles to Deacon Monroe's.

June 21. Proceeded on my road; crossed the Cayuga Lake; rode 2 miles and put up. My whole day's ride was about 20 miles.

June 22. Rode 12 miles to Geneva, where I aimed to get time enough to give notice of a meeting on the Sabbath. Rode through no place on the road from Oneida to this place where they have any preaching only occasional; was urged in many places to tarry until they could give notice and have lectures but it would disappoint me in my plan of being here on the Sabbath. Found some Christian friends on the road and made appointments for preaching on my way at my return. The man who keeps the ferry on this side the lake and his wife appear to be pious people and Mr. Crane and his wife the next neighbour on the road to this place.

June 23. Lord's Day.—Preached both parts of the day to a small assembly. There appears to be a small number of pious

people in this place. This place with its neighbourhood is formed into a Presbyterian Society; but no church collected. The people here are very stupid and inattentive. They were strolling about the streets from house to house in time of publick worship. There a great part of them lust, and curiosity nor anything else will invite their attention to a sermon. There is no encouragement to preach in this place.

June 24. Monday.—Wrote letters to send home to my family; then rode 16 miles to Canadarqua; passed through East town where there is a very good settlement. The people assemble on the Sabbath for religious worship among themselves. They have had no preaching only by missionaries. Lodged in the house with Mr. Field who is preaching at Canadarque. Mr. Channing from N. London preached here last Sabbath and Mr. Field at East town.

June 25. Rode 8 miles to N. 10 in Bloomfield. Here I found 38 families the heads of which were my hearers when I was settled in Alford; found people attentive to religion. Spent the afternoon in visiting a few of those families.

June 26. Visited in the forenoon and attended a funeral in the afternoon of a child.

June 27. Continued my visits to my old and new Christian friends who had attended my ministry almost 10 years. Had a very agreeable day; spent in a circle of my old intimate friends some of whom accompanied me from one house to another.

June 28. Visited some families in the forenoon and attended a lecture in the afternoon. Mr. Field preached. A candidate who is preaching at Canadarque. Here I saw Brothers Parmale & Bushnal. He has an appointment by the Connecticut Missionary Society to this County as a Missionary, which he has accepted. He and I lodged together.

June 29. Rode about 9 miles to Bristol in the forenoon. Gave notice of preaching with them on the Sabbath. In the afternoon rode 6 miles to Canadarque to leave some letters to be conveyed to my family by a traveller. Returned back to Bristol; lodged at Deacon Coddings.

June 30. Lord's Day.—Preached both parts of the day to a very attentive assembly. There is a great attention to religion here. The church that was formed here in April last consisting

of but 10 members male and female has had an addition of 25 new professors. A number more is likely to come forward soon. At five of the clock, attended with a number of serious enquiring persons at my lodging. After dismissing them, some nigh neighbours continued while late in the evening. The appearance here was very encouraging.

July 1. Rode 2 miles to visit a man with a broken leg and a sick man with a fever. Visited in this forenoon a number of persons in soul concern and some who were comforted in mind. In the afternoon rode 4 miles to another part of the town and attended a conference with a number of people chiefly women at Mr. Mashers. It is a hurrying time with men. Then rode one mile to Rev. Mr. Hun's; lodged with him.

July 2. Tuesday in the forenoon rode 3 miles to Capt. Goodwin's accompanied by Mr. Hun. Visited on the road and conversed with some serious people. In the afternoon preached a lecture at their meeting-house 1-½ miles to a very solemn assembly. The people generally attended. Returned and lodged at Capt. Goodwin's.

July 3. Rode 3-½ miles up Mud Creek; conversed with a number of persons on the way of different descriptions. In the afternoon attended a conference at Mr. Wilder's with a large number of enquiring people. Conversed afterwards with a number in distress of mind; some who had hopes.

July 4. Rode 8 miles to a small neighbourhood between Bloomfield and Canadarque on the Genesee Road and attended a conference with a large number of people. It was not only attended by the people of this neighbourhood who are chiefly Baptists, but from Bloomfield and some from Bristol and from every family that lived on the road to Canandarqua. Brother Bushnal appointed this conference and attended with me. The assembly was solemn. They appeared attentive to everything that they thought would afford them any instruction. There were people here who were truly concerned for their souls. Brother Bushnal lodged in this neighbourhood and I rode about 4 miles to Esq. Hopkinsis.

July 5. Rode in the morning 6 miles to Boutentown to Brother Parmalee's. Met Bro. Bushnal here; heard him preach in the forenoon. I preached in the afternoon. It was a fast appointed

by the church. Spent the evening in a circle of Christian friends in conversation.

July 6. Took another road back to Hopkins' settlement about 8 miles; visited a number more of my old acquaintances some who had obtained a hope in Christ and others under serious concern of soul.

July 7. Lord's Day.—Preached at N. 10 of the 4th Range; this place all day to a large and solemn assembly; and baptized 7 children. Attended a conference at 2 hours by the sun.

July 8. Visited and conversed on religious subjects and experience all day.

July 9. Rode six miles to Gardnertown. This is No. 10 in the 5th Range; in the afternoon a conference assisted by Bro. Bushnell in the examination of members to incorporate into Christian state. Examined 14 who were satisfied with one another.

July 10. In the forenoon we formed a Confession of Faith and covenant for them to write in. Met in the afternoon; examined 4 members more and proposed to them the confession of faith and covenant which after attending to they adopted.

July 11. We made our arrangements for preaching for the next 3 Sabbaths and parted. I set out for Hartford on the Genesee River. Rode through Charleston into Hartford 11 miles. Visited a number of families who came from Tyringham on my way made an appointment to preach tomorrow at 5 o'clock in Charleston; lodged at Landlord Person's in Hartford. He is a Baptist in profession; his wife was brought up a Presbyterian. I hope they are both pious.

July 12. Visited some families on my way back; stopped at Col. Morgan's to take dinner; it rained; in the afternoon rode to Mr. Warner's the place appointed for Lecture; being showery, it prevented some people from attending but I had a number of attentive hearers; Rode about 2 miles; lodged at Mr. Warner's.

July 13. Rode to Gardnertown 4-½ miles in the forenoon; in the afternoon wrote letters to New England.

July 14. Lord's Day.—Preached all day to an attentive assembly; Baptized 1 child for Ebenezer Curtis, Esq.; attended a conference at sun 2 hours high with a large number of people; 18 persons propounded.

July 15. Visited a number of families in Gardnertown; some of the persons who were propounded to unite in Christian State and along the road to Mr. Jonathan Addams, travelled about 6 miles.

July 16. Visited in the forenoon; attended a conference at 4 o'clock East of Mud Creek in No. 10 Bloomfield with a number of Attentive people. Returned to Mr. Addams; rode about 10 miles.

July 17. Wrote letters home; friends came in for conversation; attended a conference at 5 o'clock.

July 18. Rode to Bristol 8 miles; preached at 4 o'clock to a large and attentive congregation. It was a very hurrying season but a shower in the afternoon interrupted their business so that they generally attended meeting.

July 19. Rode to Canandarque to forward some letters and back to Capt. Goodwin's 14 miles.

July 20. Rode 9 miles to Pitstown on the Honeoye Lake No. 9 in the 5th Range. Capt. Pits lives in No. 9. Pitstown contains 4 towns 6 miles square in the 4th and 5th Range, No. 8 and No. 9.

July 21. Lord's Day.—The meeting was held  $3\frac{1}{2}$  miles from Capt. Pits in No. 9 Range 5 toward the North part of the Town. Preached both parts of the day; returned to Capt. Pits; attended a conference at his house toward night. They make but a small congregation here as yet, but attentive almost all Congregationals. A few have entertained a hope within 6 months past; some now seriously attentive. Conference was agreeable.

July 22. In the forenoon I went down accompanied by Capt. Pits to take a view of the Honeoye Lake and some of the old Indian improvements around it. Visited 2 families in our way; one from N. Hartford in Connecticut. The woman and her sister appear to be pious subjects of the late attention in N. H. last winter. The man was attentive. In the afternoon Mr. Bushnell came up from Bigtree where he preached on the Sabbath; went with me to visit school of about 20 small children. We conversed with them about an hour; they appeared sober and some of them affected principally a little girl about 12 years old. Visited a family in our way back. In the evening at an early hour the family came in with the hired men to prayers; attended with some of the neighboring young people who all set down after prayers and attended very soberly to little conference of about  $\frac{4}{5}$  of an hour and retired silently without any noise.

July 23. Rode 6 miles to Capt. Herman's in the Nth part of the Town; took dinner with him; had some religious conversation with the family and a sick man in the house; then rode to Charleston about 9 miles to Col. Morgan's N—— Range——.

July 24. In the morning rode about 2 miles to Hartford-Landlord Person's. I had it in view to have preached a sermon here in the afternoon; but it was good weather for haying and harvest that was now just beginning and the situation of the people forbid it. Gave notice of preaching at another time and rode back on the Genesee. Rode to Gardnertown 8 miles to Esq. Persons. Lodged there.

July 25. Rode 6 miles to Bloomfield N. 10 4 Range; visited on my way; came to Mr. Jonathan Addams; tarried all night.

July 26. Rode about 7 miles this day in different directions; visited a number of seriously attentive families and attended a conference with a respectable number of attentive inquiring people, chiefly women. All appeared to be agreeably entertained; lodged at Mr. Amos Brunsons.

July 27. Rode to Eben Hopkins Esq. wrote letters to New England in the forenoon; had appointed to preach to morrow at Charlestown; but Mr. Andrus a Missionary came on who went to Charleston and preached in my room, so I tarried in this town at Mr. Addams.

July 28. Lord's Day.—Preached both parts of the day to a large assembly who appeared attentive. Attended a conference toward night with a large number of people.

July 29. Rode about 3-½ miles and attended a funeral; preached at 10 o'clock. Rode back to Esq. Hopkins. Met Rev'd Mr. Joseph Grover and Mr. Andrus, missionaries from New Jersey for a 5 months tour; spent the afternoon with them in conversation with a number of Christian friends. Consulted in what way we should improve our time to the best advantage as Missionaries in this present hurry of business with men who had great harvests and few laborers; and which way we should go. I had an appointment for Friday and the next Sabbath. Mr. Andrews who was under the direction of Mr. Grover was directed back over the Cayuga Lake. Mr. Grover went out to Bigtree and concluded to preach here next Sabbath.

July 30. Visited a number of families where I had pressing invitations some Christian friends; and some under concern of mind; some inquiring but not sensible of any serious conviction. Travelled about 5 miles.

July 31. Visited a school of small children about 24 from 11 years old to about 4. They appeared to have been well instructed in things of religion for their age and some of them were affected when they answered questions that related to the exercises of their hearts. Visited other families in the afternoon. Lodged at Esq. Hopkins.

August 1. Got my horse's shoes set in the forenoon. In the afternoon rode about 2½ miles; visited a few families in the way and attended a conference at 5 o'clock with a considerable number of seriously attentive people chiefly women. They professed to be agreeably entertained. Brother Bushnell attended with me. It was at Nathan Rose's. Went about 2½ miles to Mr. Jonathan Addams. Tarried all night.

August 2. Rode 8 miles to Bristol in the forenoon; visited and conversed with a few families by the way; in the afternoon preached a sacramental lecture to a large and solemnly affected number of people. This a second time I had preached a lecture here since the hurry of harvest when there was a shower that prevented business but left them good weather to attend meeting.

August 3. In the forenoon, rode 7 miles to Canandaigua after a letter I heard was there for me as I was in hopes it was from New England, being anxious to hear from home, but it was from Lt. Langdon in Westmoreland. Rode back in the same forenoon 7 miles; spent the afternoon at Capt. Goodwin's in study.

August 4. Lord's Day.—Preached both parts of the day; admitted 14 persons as members of this church; baptized 6 of them; administered sacrament to them for the first time in this church formed in April last of 10 members only and now 50 members; communed at the Lord's table; at the close of publick worship baptized 9 children. It was a very solemn day. A large assembly of people for so new a country and additions to this church were principally of late converts. Some old professors.

Deacon Coddington, Capt. Gooding and others from Dyton (?) said they never attended so solemn and joyful a communion in their lives before. Between the meetings Divine Providence was



the subject of conversation when it was observed by one or more that they had been told by some of the Indians that their meeting house stood on the old Indian path in which they went when they cut off the inhabitants on the Susquehannah; and the very spot of ground where 50 Communicants had partook of the sacrament of the Lord's supper was the spot where the warriors were met on their return and exposed their English scalps on poles to the view of the several tribes for rejoicing; the same place General Sullivan had his encampment when he went on to destroy those nations and on the Honeoye Lake; and it was requested that the afternoon exercises might begin by singing the 107 Psalm.

August 5. Rode 9 miles to Pitstown on the Honeoye; preached at Capt. Pits sun 2 hours high to a small number of grown people and a whole school of children about 20 all appeared very attentive. The settlements in this town are scattering all over it and no thick neighbourhood and men were very busy in their harvests.

August 6. Rode about 24 miles through Bristol and Canandaigua, and East town to Senneke. Made an appointment to preach at Mr. Daniel Gates in Easttown on Thursday; tried for a meeting here the next day, but the hurry of business and scattered situation of the people was such that I could not obtain a meeting, although the men were desirous of it. I appointed a sermon here the 26 in the afternoon. Tarried here all night.

August 7. Rode to Geneva 4 miles. I visited some families here and returned  $2\frac{1}{2}$  miles to Mr. Silas Chapin's. There has been preaching at Geneva most of the Sabbaths since I was there on the Sabbath by Missionaries who had come into the country and had taken their different routes up the Sennecke Lake and down the Outlet and their numbers (?) I think there are some people that begin to think more serious in Geneva.

August 8. Rode to Mr. Gates 9 miles; here I had appointed to preach in the afternoon but the hurry of business was such that no one came to meeting. There is no real seriousness in this place. Rode into Canandaigua with Esq. Gates  $2\frac{1}{2}$  miles. Lodged at Mr. Chapins.

August 9. Visited Mr. Cayre's family, the printer; his wife is Mr. Close's daughter. Mrs. Whiteing and her daughter were sick here. She was from Salisborough. They were all at Col. Porters who married his daughter. He was from Salisborough.

Also visited Gen. Taylor. He was from Westfield a religious family; then rode about 9 miles to Bloomfield where I had appointed a lecture at 1 o'clock. In my way called on Mr. Rue's family and took dinner. This is the house where I attended the funeral of a child. In the afternoon attended my appointment but a Mr. Barklay from a missionary from Boundbrook in New Jersey sent on by the General Assembly of the Presbyterians, he preached in my stead to a large number of people about 170; after sermon attended a Church conference appointed for the examination of persons for admittance to communion, when 4 persons came forward who gave good satisfaction. Lodged at Esq. Hopkins with Mr. Backus.

August 10. Rode to Northfield N. 12 5 Range about 16 miles but to visit some families by appointment on the road it was about 18 miles to Mr. Jarril Farr's where I lodged. He and his wife are religious people.

August 11. Lord's Day.—Preached both parts of the day at a Mr. Hartford's in a house of Mr. Simon Stones to a considerable collection of people about 160 who appeared to give good attention. After meeting attended a conference at Mr. Silas Nye's with about 40 or 60 people who brought forward a number of important questions. I found there were 2 or 3 instances of serious attention. I hope there is a good work begun here. There is great opposition but truth has appeared to prevail. Mr. Williston has preached here and Mr. Bushnell preached the last Lord's Day. There are 2 meetings kept up here on the Sabbath when they have no minister from abroad. A Mr. Jones a Baptist from D. D. Gils Church in England has been persuaded to lead in a meeting in opposition to a meeting set up by a Mr. Billingshurst who is a Baptist in profession but otherwise corrupt in sentiment. He denies the divinity of Christ and the eternity of Hell torments. The bulk of the people are congregationalists but have none that will take the lead in meeting although there is a number of professors. This six miles square town is called Sonetown.

August 12. Rode 6 miles to Mr. Samuel Bennetts in N 12 in the 4th Range called Perrintown. It is in Northfield District. He is a religious man a Baptist by profession the only one in the town. There is but six families in this town. I preached at his

house in the afternoon and attended a conference with them about an hour after. There were assembled about 26 persons old and young. They appeared to listen to everything that was said. The son of old Mr. Northrup late of Lenox lives in this town.

August 13. Rode 15 miles to Palmirey in N. 12 of the 2d Range. Attended a meeting I had appointed at Deacon Fosters; was met here by Mr. Barkley and his companion Mr. Logan a candidate from Virginia. Mr. Barkley preached a sermon and baptized 7 children on the Presbyterian plan. We all three made a visit after meeting at Capt. Foster's consulted the route they should take for preaching the short stay they should make in the country. I left them for the night and returned and lodged at Deacon Foster's. The assembly was crowded in 2 considerable rooms and very attentive.

August 14. Returned with Mr. Logan 6 miles to No. 12 of the 3d Range with some of the people here. These two towns make one Society. There is a Presbyterian Church and a Baptist Church. The Baptists are chiefly in the 3d Range. Preached in a school house to a respectable number of people all attentive. There were some real conviction here. After meeting rode 4 miles into the edge of N. 12 3d Range to the house of a Quaker who had sent a request to have me call on him if I could make it convenient. He and I conversed according to his wish on Experimental Religion and not on the peculiarities of our profession. He professed to be pleased with the conversation and I charitably hope he has experienced the truth of religion.

August 15. Rode through this town into N. 11 4th Range to Mr. Parmalee's. There I heard from Stockbridge. There is a great attention to religion there. Rode into N. 10 of the same Range in the forenoon to Mr. Addams my headquarters or home 15 miles. In the afternoon rode 6 miles to Gardnertown to Ebenezer Curtis Esq.

August 16. Met in the forenoon for the purpose of establishing a church in this town; Present:—Rev. Mr. Parmelee, Brother Bushnell and Mr. Timothy Field. Mr. Parmelee preached the first sermon; then 19 persons came forward 7 male and 12 females and made confession of faith; after this baptized 3 of the number. Then they took upon them the covenant and we acknowledged them a Church of Christ. Then made a prayer, sung a psalm, preached

a second sermon concluded by prayer and singing. The people were solemn, behaved well, in a decent manner. It was a solemn and joyful occasion. This Church appears to be built up of lovely stones. At 4 o'clock we attended the examination of 5 persons 1 man and 4 women who were approved of to be propounded for admittance to this church. Lodged at Esq. Curtis's.

August 17. Made visits to a number of families with whom I had contracted an acquaintance, members of the church formed here. Retired to my quarters at Ebenezer Curtis's, Esq.

August 18. Lord's Day.—Preached both parts of the day; administered the Lord's Supper; baptized 7 children. The day was solemn; the assembly was full and attentive and Christ was comforted. Propounded 5 persons for communion; attended a small conference in the neighbourhood towards evening.

August 19. Went to Hartford where I had appointed to preach at Mr. Persons. Before lecture went about 2 miles to visit the late family of Mr. Samuel Dimmick who died the 15th instant. The woman and 2 children were sick of the same fever. Polly Dimmick I had seen at Mr. Persons before this. This family was last from Tyringham. Returned and preached to an assembly of a little more than 30 persons, some Methodists, Baptists and Presbyterians. Rode this day about 12 miles.

August 20. Rode back to Gardnertown. Received the contribution of last Sabbath 5.50 cents. In the afternoon rode down to 11,000 acres and preached at 3 o'clock to between 30 and 40 people; had a conference after sermon. This is a small newish settlement in Bloomfield N. 11 5th Range. The people appeared not indifferent to sentiment; some strenuous opposition to the doctrine of the Duties and some appeared to understand the realish truth. There has never been a sermon preached in this town until since I came into the country. Tarried here all night. Rode this day about 15 miles. A considerable part of the inhabitants were from Alford.

August 21. Rode to Bowtontown in the forenoon 6 miles; visited several families of my acquaintance in my way; came to Mr. Parmelees about noon. Preached in the afternoon to a respectable number of people; quite attentive; had a conference for an hour and  $\frac{1}{2}$  after sermon. We had a letter read from Gotian (Goshen) written by Mr. John Doud to his daughters in this

town informing them that the work of God still goes on with power in that town and neighboring towns. It was to the great joy of many here. Remark. Mr. Doud has three daughters in Bloomfield and 3 at home. All have entertained an hope within 6 months past.

August 22. Visited Mr. Stone's family in the morning. His wife is sick with a fever after being lately put to bed. Set out for Bristol. Called on Major Eber Norton and Nathaniel Norton, Esq. Preached at Bristol. Mr. Logan was present; rode about 12 miles.

August 23. Rode to Bloomfield N. 10 in company with Mr. Logan. Met in the forenoon with Mr. Baker a Missionary from Granvel and Mr. Bushnell. In the afternoon attended a sacramental lecture I had appointed and Mr. Baker being present preached. We were all present at the lecture. After sermon we all went our different ways. I went to Mr. Jonathan Adams. I rode this day about 9 miles.

August 24. Made a visit to several families I had promised, particularly to Mr. Amos Lusks who married the Widow Hull, formerly Mary Addams. Rode about 7 miles.

August 25. Lord's Day.—Preached in N. 10 both parts of the day to an assembly of nearly 200 people; admitted 3 persons to the church one of them received baptism; administered the Lord's Supper to about 56 communicants. This church consists now of 53 members and a number of their former members have been dismissed and recommended to the Church of Bristol last spring and of late to Gardnertown. I baptized 27 children, 11 for Mr. Moses Sperry, 7 for Mr. Lot Rew and 3 for a woman whose name I do not remember. This day there was more preaching in this vicinity; than ever had been on any one Sabbath before in years. Place at Canandaigua, Bristol, Boughtontown, Gardnertown, Pitstown and Charlestown. We had a solemn day here. I took my farewell this day from my old acquaintance and Christian friends of this place. Rode in the evening about 3 miles to East part of the town and lodged. Was contributed 7.65 cents.

August 26. Set out on my return through Canandaigua and East town to N. 10 the 1st Range in the district of Sinnecke to Landlord Amsdens and preached to about 35 persons; baptized one child. The parents were members of my church; went after

meeting to Mr. Jonathan Chapins in this neighbourhood, though in the town south N. 9 there has never been a sermon preached before in this neighbourhood. I rode this day about 20 miles.

August 27. Rode back into N. 10 to Mr. Silas Chapins about 4 miles to breakfast. Then to Geneva  $2\frac{1}{2}$ ; then to the Seneca Falls 11; then to the Cayuga Lake 3 miles; then to Z. Huggins 7 miles. Rode this day including the ferry 30 miles. This District is Aurelius in Cayuga County.

August 28. Rode 14 miles to Esq. Carpenters; called on several people in my way; at Atwells at the parting of the Old and New Genesee Roads, 12 miles from the Lake. This is a place worthy of some attention by Missionaries. Called at Mr. Jacob Sheldons a pious family nephew (?) to Mr. Asa Sheldon of N. Marlborough. At Deacon Monroe's a Baptist in this neighbourhood I preached here in the afternoon to about 30 persons who heard attentively. Lodged at Moses Carpenter's Esq. This District is Camelus.

August 29. This morning it rained. It has been very dry in most places in this western country. They say that there has been more rain now in this place than has been since April. At 11 o'clock it broke away so that I set out on my way in company with some people from Bloomfield. Mr. Persons and Lady Missurs and Misis Hall wife of Col. Hall. Rode 20 miles to Fosters Tavern in Manlius through Onondaga.

August 30. Rode 23 miles to the Oneida Reservation to my sons; arrived here about 2 o'clock; staid with them the rest of the day.

August 31. This day visited some of the people in this settlement. I found my daughter here.

September 1. Lord's Day.—Preached both parts of the day to considerable number of people. The forenoon was rainy made the roads so wet that prevented many people from attending, especially women. Baptized one child.

September 2. Rode 14 miles; called on old acquaintance. Visited Mr. Norton of Clinton went to Mr. Joseph Chapins who had lost a daughter in the time I was at the westward. Lodged at his house.

September 3. Rode 8 miles to Paris to Mr. Steele's when it rained. Got my horse shod. In the afternoon preached a lecture for Mr. Steel; tarried all night.

September 4. Rode 8 miles to Bridgewater; called on Col. Convas; found Mr. Storr's at his sons on a visit with his lady to his place. He is minister at Ashford. Mr. Richmond was here. He is preaching a part of his time in this town. Came to my Unkle John Avery's. His son John who lived with him buried his wife the 15th of June last. It rained hard from about 10 o'clock in the morning until very late in the night or the whole.

September 5. Cloudy and some mist of rain. The forenoon was rainy; set out in the afternoon; rode 12 miles. The road was very muddy. Lodged at Edson's tavern.

September 6. Rode 27 miles to Bomans Creek through Otsego, Springfield, Connojocharie, Turlow into Sharon to my brothers; found them all well. My brother's wife had been delivered of a son about 4 weeks before; all well. His married daughter was in better health than when I was there before. I called on friends by the way who had a desire to have me tarry while notice could be given and preach with them. Places destitute of steady preaching.

September 7. Rode to Bern known by the name of Hillibaruck 43 miles through Sharon, Cobuskill, Old Schoharie, through almost the whole of this road there is people that need instruction. By the best information I could get some numbers would attend instruction although they are a mixed multitude. They need good instruction in Sharon, Cobuskill  $1\frac{1}{2}$  miles west of the bridge and in this place. Judge Beekman in Sharon: rained hard 1 o'clock.

September 8. Lord's Day.—Preached in this place to an assembly of about 150 or 200. Very attentive. The people here are a large number from Stonington my native place in sentiment. They are Baptist, Methodist, Presbyterians, Congregationals. They urged me to tarry and preach a lecture the next day to which I consented; small conference in the evening.

September 9. Made and received some visits in the forenoon; it moderately rained in the afternoon. Preached at 1 o'clock to a respectable number of people; after sermon went into a conference until night. Many inquiries were made on sentiment. Some staid at my lodgings at my brother-in-law until 7 o'clock.

September 10. Tuesday. Rained in the morning. Set on my way home at 11 in the morning. Rode 27 miles to Caleb Hills in Greenbush.

Travelled.....1026 miles.

Preached 45 sermons.

Was a hearer of 4 sermons.

Attended as many conferences.

Formed one church.

Administered Sacrament 3 times.

Attended the examination of 44 for communion.

Baptized 10 adult persons and 47 children.

Collected from Gardnertown.....4.50

Bristol.....5.75

Bloomfield.....6.75

15.90<sup>1</sup>

---

<sup>1</sup>So in the manuscript.



## OBITUARIES

WILLIAM ALEXANDER MACDONALD died at Gloversville, New York, December 11, 1920, where he had lived since early boyhood. He was born at Floyd, New York, February 25, 1868, and was a son of Alexander and Caroline Alexander MacDonald.

He was graduated from Gloversville High School in 1886 and from Union College with the degree of A.B. in 1891. After studying law in the office of Baker and Burton in Gloversville he was admitted to the bar in 1893. From his admission to the bar until his death he practiced law in Gloversville. He was recorder of Gloversville from 1894 to 1898 and city attorney the following ten years. Thereafter he devoted himself to private practice and specialized in the work of a trial lawyer. He was a member of the New York State Bar Association and one of its vice-presidents.

Mr. MacDonald was a director of the Gloversville Chamber of Commerce and its legal representative. Long identified with the work of the Gloversville Free Library, he was a director for the last twelve years and president of the board of directors for the last four years. He was a member of the First Methodist Episcopal Church of Gloversville, one of the trustees and chairman of the music committee. Other organizations of which he was a member are: Gloversville Lodge No. 429 F. & A. M. and Johnstown Chapter Royal Arch Masons, Gloversville Lodge I.O.O.F., Court Sir William Johnson Ancient Order of Foresters, Captain David Getman Junior Camp Sons of Veterans, the Eccentric Club, the Delta Upsilon Fraternity.

Mr. MacDonald was married Sept. 4, 1894, to Minnie E. Baird. Two children and his wife survive him.

ELIZABETH BUTLER KERNAN, who died December 25, 1920, was the daughter of Francis and Hannah Avery Devereux Kernan. Born in Utica, New York, March 23, 1851, she was educated at Miss Tobin's school in Utica and the Sacred Heart Convent at Kenwood, near Albany, of which later she was a graduate.

Throughout her father's term as United States senator she saw much of the social life at Washington. Her mother was an invalid

and Miss Kernan was her father's constant companion at state and social functions. She accompanied her father to notable political conventions and traveled extensively in this country and Europe. As a hostess she had the faculty of always giving pleasure to others and always having a good time herself.

Miss Kernan's interests were not confined to her family and the activities of society. She was a lifelong parishioner of St. John's Church, Utica, and was active in its charitable and religious societies. Years ago she became intimately associated with the work of her church among the Italians of East Utica. She did more than any other layman or laywoman to bring about the establishment of the churches of St. Mary of Mt. Carmel and St. Anthony of Padua for the Italians. Some twenty years ago she founded St. Anthony's Society for welfare work among the Italian boys and girls of East Utica. It has become an extensive work. The St. Anthony's Society was recently merged with the National Catholic Welfare Council, and the old House of the Good Shepherd, bought for the St. Anthony's Society mainly through the efforts of Miss Kernan, is now the Girl's Community House conducted by the Welfare Council.

Miss Kernan was a Daughter of the American Revolution, a Colonial Dame and a member of the Catholic Women's Club of Utica.

## REVIEWS OF BOOKS

*History of the New York Times, 1851-1921.* By ELMER DAVIS.  
(New York: New York Times. 1921. Pp. xxii, 434. Illustrations).

This work has a very interesting introduction by Mr. Adolph S. Ochs, principal owner of the *Times*, and is then divided into two parts. Part I, occupying 174 pages, deals with the history of the *Times* previous to its purchase by Mr. Ochs and his associates in 1896. It contains five chapters and covers such interesting episodes as the "Civil War and Reconstruction," "The *Times* and the Tweed Ring," and others of similar interest.

Part II, contains six chapters and covers the period from 1896 to date. The policy of the *Times* is carefully explained, particularly that relating to its business management and its advertisers. Its attitude in the World War and its news-gathering methods are the subjects of other chapters.

Mr. Davis has treated a topic which in other hands might have proved very dry reading. The reader, however, goes from page, to page with increasing interest. It is inevitable that a *History of the Times* should say much about the *Times* and Mr. Ochs. Certainly the latter deserves the praise which is given him, for it was his courage in face of obstacles, his indefatigable energy and his indomitable will that took a newspaper, "dead—down—and—out," and made it live.

Many stories in a lighter view are told and enliven the pages throughout. There are many that remain untold. Those who have followed its interesting career lament that nothing is said of the Pabst Portico, on the site of which, by an irony of fate, the *Times* Building now stands, or of that editorial on poor Professor Langley's flying attempt which landed in the Potomac. The treatment of the distressing episode of the Austrian peace proposal, which gave so many of its rivals the opportunity to "dig" the *Times*, does not carry the conviction that it should.

Whether one agrees with the political views of the *Times* or not, this volume will prove very instructive reading. As a newspaper it may truly be called a "Maker of the Twentieth Century."

JAMES SULLIVAN

*With the 351st in France, A Diary.* Compiled by Sergeant WILLIAM O. ROSS and Corporal DUKE L. SLAUGHTER. (Baltimore: The Afro-American Company. [1921] Pp. 52. Illustrations and map.)

This is an account of the 351st Field Artillery, colored, in diary form. With the facilities for printing now offered, similar publications for every unit in the army ought to be issued. Probably in almost every one of them some man, or men kept diaries which might be published.

The numerous illustrations virtually give a likeness of every man who served in this unit and a map shows its travels. As it does not pretend to be a complete history, no list of the regiment is given, nor any account of its technical military manoeuvres.

The cooperative spirit of the colored people and that of the two authors in getting it out, deserves emulation by their white brethren.

*Hickoxy's Army,* Being a Short History of Headquarters Company, 306th Field Artillery, 77th Division, A. E. F. (New York: Headquarters Company, 306th Field Artillery Book Fund. Pp. 175. Illustrations.)

This volume like many others reviewed in this JOURNAL, is to be compared to a college, or high school manual. It represents the "doughboy" as he was; not the morbid, introspective neurotic and constitutional rebel against his officers and the government, such as Dos Passos portrays in *Three Soldiers*, but a light-hearted fun-maker. Even when the work he was called upon to do was disagreeably hard and in the tensest moments he joked and played. For every book like that of Dos Passos hundreds of these will be written, for every man like the characters in his book, thousands of fun-loving soldiers will refute his imputations.

The very title of the book is fun, Hickox being the name of the captain of the company and the play upon the word is in reference to Coxey's army of the early nineties fame. The titles of some of the numerous chapters which are contributed by the various members, will indicate their nature: "The Gloom Club;" "If Becker were a General," by Himself; and so on. Nevertheless a good deal of serious material is worked in. A list of those killed and wounded in action is included and accounts and photographs are given of each member of the company. Like most units in the famous 77th, the names show that descent from virtually every nationality in Europe is represented.

*Influences Toward Radicalism in Connecticut, 1754-1775.* By EDITH ANNA BAILEY. Smith College Studies in History, Vol. V, No. 4. July 1920. (Northampton: Smith College. Pp. 74.)

The object of this volume is to show that radical opposition to the mother country in Connecticut was fostered by the fashion in which the British authorities thwarted the attempts of the Connecticut settlers to expand into the valley of the Susquehannah. This immediately gives this study an interest to New York State and the author (p. 195) soon brings the reader to realize that Sir William Johnson did all in his power to prevent the Indians from making any grants to the people from Connecticut. In this he was assisted by Governor Hamilton of Pennsylvania, but it may be safely stated that Johnson was the chief factor in getting the British government to take the stand it did. Though the men from Connecticut realized the importance of getting Johnson's cooperation and attempted to do so, he remained hostile to their efforts, and undoubtedly prejudiced the government in London against them.

Miss Bailey's interesting and scholarly study is well worth reading in order to learn how important a part these economic factors, represented by this land company, played in bringing about a feeling of resentment against the mother country which needed only a little "fanning of the coals" to bring on the revolt which we know as the Revolution.

## NOTES AND QUERIES

### PERSONAL

Hon. George M. Pratt, who has given to the New York State Historical Association the monument of an Indian which is to be dedicated at the October meeting of that society at Lake George, has gone on a trip to Alaska and after his return he is to go to Europe.

Dr. James Sullivan, the State Historian, was in Europe this summer making arrangements in the public record offices in London and Paris for making copies of manuscript material concerning New York State history. This consists of some manuscripts for which New York has never had copies and of duplicates, the originals of which were lost in the Capitol fire of 1911. He also visited the battlefields in which New York State troops had been engaged in the World War.

### HISTORICAL SOCIETIES AND CLUBS

At the meeting of the William Floyd Chapter of the Sons of the Revolution on Bennington Battlefield, June 9, 1921, William H. Seaman aged eighty-five years, of Ballston Spa., recalled talks with his grandfather who fought as a boy in the Revolutionary army. Major E. W. Van Etten gave an account of the battle. Hobart W. Thompson, regent of the Chapter, announced that he was going to appoint a committee to see about putting up markers.

The recently organized Genesee Chapter of the Sons of the Revolution is cooperating with the Deo-on-go-wa Chapter of the D. A. R., in marking historical spots in Genesee County. Among their objects of particular care are to be the site, the arsenal, the restoration of milestones and the care of old cemeteries.

The First Historical Club of Whitesboro celebrated its twenty-fifth anniversary on May 31, 1921.

The Onondaga Historical Association observed pioneer day at Skaneateles on June 4, 1921, with historical addresses and reminiscences.

The Mohawk Valley Historical Association held its meeting at the Herkimer Homestead on August 6, 1921. Mrs. Charlotte A. Pitcher spoke on the historic spots of the Mohawk Valley. Mrs. John F. Calder spoke on "The Mohawk Turnpike and its Maps;" Mrs. E. J. Mowry on "Historic Markers;" Mr. Ivan T. Burney on "Herkimer the Man;" Mr. Charles F. McClumpha on "The Mohawk Valley in the Revolution."

The Montgomery County Historical Society has arranged with Mrs. Lillian D. Van Dusen of Fonda to write a series of articles on historic subjects for the county newspapers. The first of these on the founding of Tryon County appeared in the *Gloversville Leader* for August 4, 1921.

The Monroe County Pioneers Association celebrated the hundredth anniversary of the founding of the county on August 18, 1921.

The Tioga County Historical Society held its annual meeting on June 21, 1921, at the Coburn Free Library in Owego. Miss Mary A. Brown was appointed to secure data on the early Swiss settlers and Director Davis was asked to secure data about the early settlers from Alsace-Lorraine on Germany Hill. Several gifts were announced.

The Seneca Falls Historical Society announces that it has acquired a site for a building and a campaign is now to be undertaken to get funds for a building. As soon as one is erected, two valuable collections of documents, books, and maps, gathered by Prof. W. H. Beach and Miss Janet M. Cowing, will be given to the society.

The Booneville Historical Club held its annual meeting on May 31, 1921, and new officers were elected. Mrs. Henry D. Ryder for president, and Miss Anna L. Watson for secretary.

The fifty-ninth anniversary of the departure of the 108th regiment of the New York Civil War Volunteers from Rochester, was celebrated by the survivors on August 19, 1921.

## PUBLICATIONS, BOOKS, ARTICLES, MANUSCRIPTS

The *Lyons Republican* has issued its 100th anniversary number under the date of August 3, 1921. It is a veritable compendium of local history and allied information.

The Division of Archives and History of the University of the State of New York has published the *Records of Huntington*, prepared by a committee headed by Mrs. Irving S. Sammis. The other members were: Mrs. William B. Gibson, Mrs. Herbert W. Spargur, and Mrs. Alfred B. Sammis.

A committee of the Mohawk Valley Historical Association announces that it is soon to publish an "Old Mohawk Turnpike" book to contain over 128 pages with over 100 maps and illustrations.

Samuel T. Russell of Ilion has a valuable collection of letters written by Generals Spinner, Sherman, Grant, Sheridan and Thomas, and by such men as John Hay, and others.

In the *Quarterly Publication of the Historical and Philosophical Society of Ohio*, Jan.-June, 1921, is an article by H. T. Leyland on "The Ohio Company," in which the names of two men well known in New York State history appear as important factors: George Croghan and Andrew Montour.

In the *American Political Science Quarterly* for June, 1921, is a short article on *The New York State Legislative Session of 1921*.

The State of New York has published in four volumes the report of its joint legislative commission, investigating seditious activities under the title of *Revolutionary Radicalism*.

In the *Missouri Historical Review* for July, 1921, Floyd C. Shoemaker contributes an article on *Popularizing State History*, which is of interest to New Yorkers. One clause is interesting: "Just as New York State awakened to the widespread dissemination of Massachusetts history and the comparative oblivion of its own history of Revolutionary days, so is the Mississippi Valley realizing that its people have more knowledge of Salem Witchcraft, than of the great St. Louis Fur Trade."

In the *Grosvenor Library Bulletin* for June, 1921, appears the second article on *Seth Grosvenor and Buffalo*.



In *The Palimpsest* for August, 1921, is an article on *Perils of a Pioneer Editor*, about 1841, which is largely devoted to the career of Ver Planck Van Antwerp, formerly of New York.

In the *Indiana Magazine of History* for June, 1921, is an article by Logan Esarey on *The Approach to History*, which is of general interest.

The July, 1921, number of the *Ohio Archaeological and Historical Quarterly* is devoted exclusively to articles on *John Brown*, whose farm at North Elba in the Adirondacks is now a State park.

*The Roosevelt Memorial Association, A Report of its Activities*, is the title of a pamphlet covering the years 1919-1921. The headquarters of the association are at 1 Madison Avenue, New York City.

*The New York Historical Society Quarterly Bulletin* for July 1921, contains an account of *Blackwell's Island* with illustrations; *Stamp Act Activities in New York, 1765*; *The Liberty Pole Dedication*; and a continuation of William Kelby's *Notes on American Artists*.

The *Grosvenor Library Bulletin* for March, 1921, has articles on the *Fillmore Genealogy* and *Civil War Envelopes*. The latter is illustrated.

*State Service* for May-July, 1921, has articles on the *Lusk Report on Revolutionary Radicalism*; *Theodore Roosevelt's Influence on American Politics*; *New York State's Laws A Century Ago*.

*The Journal of American History* for 1920 (four numbers in one) contains the following articles of interest to New Yorkers: *What Shall We Do to Preserve the Old Burial Grounds?* By James Woodburn Hamilton; *A History of the Origin and Development of Banks and Banking in the City of New York*, by Bayles and Allaben; *A Colonial Preacher and Patriot*, by Colonel A. A. Pomeroy, which contains several letters from Pomeroy while he was serving as a Chaplain in the army at Fort Edward, Lake George, Crown Point and Montreal. In the same magazine are some facsimiles of the *Articles of Capitulation by General Burgoyne After the Battle of Saratoga*.

*The Year Book of the Daughters of the American Revolution of New York State* for 1920-1921, has appeared and is a compendium of the patriotic and historical activities of this organization.

Particularly interesting are the reports of Mrs. Theodore de Laporte on *Historic Research and Preservation of Records* and, by Bertha H. Coleman on *Historic Spots*. Among the latter, are enumerated De Witt Mills, Spy House, Oliver House, Bevier House, Wyncoop House—"Sally Fox Inn," Loop Hole House of the Hardenburghs, and Old Fort House.

The *Western Pennsylvania Historical Magazine* for July, 1921, publishes an account book in which the name of George Croghan frequently appears in connection with having fur-skins dressed.

In the July 1921, issue of *The Washington Historical Quarterly*, is a *Narrative* of James Sweeney who came to New York from Ireland in 1846, spent some time in Rochester, and in 1855 enlisted in the 5th U. S. Infantry, seeing much pioneer warfare in the West.

*The Colonization of North America, 1492-1783*, by Herbert E. Bolton and Thomas M. Marshall, (Macmillan Company), devotes considerable space to New York State.

The Carnegie Endowment for International Peace, is publishing *Preliminary Economic Studies of the War*. Number 25, is entitled *Government War Contracts*, by J. F. Crowell.

The *Americana* for April, 1921, has an article on *Alexander Hamilton as a Promoter*, by C. A. Shriner.

The *Proceedings of the American Antiquarian Society*, recently published has an article entitled *An Early Account of the Establishment of Jesuit Missions in America*, by H. F. De Puy.

In *The Journal of Negro History* for April, 1921, is an article on *Canadian Negroes and the John Brown Raid*, by Fred Landon, and another on *The Economic Condition of the Negroes of New York Prior to 1861*, by A. G. Lindsay.

The *Rhode Island Historical Society Collections* for April, 1921, has an article on *Early Powder Horns*, by Charles D. Cook.

The *Proceedings of the New Jersey Historical Society* for July, 1921, contains an article on *The Origin of "Rip Van Winkle."*

The *Wisconsin Magazine of History* for June, 1921, contains an article entitled *Rufus King: Soldier, Editor, Statesman*, who originally came from New York.

In the *Palimpsest* for July, 1921, is an account of *Amana*, an Iowa community, which had its first abiding place in Erie County near Buffalo, in 1842. The leader was Christian Metz.

*The Southwestern Historical Quarterly* for July, 1921, contains the *Journal of Lewis Birdsall Harris, 1836-1842*. Harris was a New Yorker, and lived in Seneca County before he went West. The first part of the *Journal* deals with his life in New York.

The *Quarterly Publication of the Historical and Philosophical Society of Ohio*, for April-June, 1921, has further *Selections from the Gano Papers*, mentioned in an earlier issue of the *JOURNAL*.

*New York Libraries* for August, 1921, has an editorial note on the importance of local history collections, which should be made by the libraries in all localities of the State.

The *Bulletin of the New York Public Library* for July, 1921, continues *A History of the New York Public Library, 1911-1920*.

In the *Daughters of the American Revolution Magazine*, for July, 1921, is an article by Jenn W. Coltrane on *Living Pictures of Historic American Women*. Among them is Mrs. Philip Schuyler of New York.

In the *New York Genealogical and Biographical Record* for July, 1921, are articles on *Levi Parsons Morton*, formerly governor of New York; *John Robinson of Oyster Bay*; *A Muster Roll of Captain Daniel Cozen's Company of the First Battalion of the New Jersey Volunteers*, (Loyalists), stationed on Long Island. The *Westchester County, N. Y., Miscellanea*; *Thomas C. Butler, and His Descendants*; and *Tompkins County Gravestone Inscriptions* are continued.

Miss Etta E. Emens has compiled a pamphlet on *Descendants of Captain Samuel Church of Churchville, N. Y.* It is to be obtained at 24 South Hawk Street, Albany, N. Y., from the Church Estate.

The New York Genealogical and Biographical Society announces the receipt of manuscripts on the Records of the Baptist Church of Lattingtown in Marlborough, Ulster County, N. Y.; a Manuscript History of Washington County, N. Y., in 7 volumes, collected and compiled by the late Dr. Asa Fitch; Graveyard Inscriptions in Germantown, Columbia County, N. Y.; Marriage and Death notices copied from the files of the *Saratoga Sentinel*; Manuscript genealogical notes relative to Saratoga families, compiled by Charles C. Durkee; Records of the Reformed Dutch Church of Kinderhook, Columbia County, N. Y.; Records of the Madison Avenue Reformed Church in the City of New York.

## MUSEUMS, HISTORIC MONUMENTS AND REMAINS

A committee of the Mohawk Valley Historical Association reports that over 100 monuments, markers and tablets have been erected in the valley.

At the Genesee County Fair, an elaborate Historical Pageant was presented on the evenings of September 22, 23 and 24, 1921. The title of the pageant was "The Keepers of the Western Door." Thirteen grange societies in the county had charge of the scenes which were to cover from the earliest times, down through the World War.

There is a movement started at Albany by former Governor Glynn, to mark by a tablet the spot from which the first train started on the Albany and Schenectady railroad, August 9, 1831. The reproduction in actual size of the first locomotive, and coaches of the first train has been on exhibition for some time in the New York Central Station, in New York City. During July, it was taken through the State on its way to Chicago, to be exhibited in a Progress Pageant.

The neglect to provide suitable markers for the Bennington Battlefield, is arousing considerable interest, and James Becket of Troy, who was largely instrumental in bringing about its acquisition by the State, is trying to get together a local committee to push this matter.

In some excavation work recently being done at New Rochelle, it is believed that the foundations of the old Huguenot Church, built there in 1710, have been uncovered.

The movement to tear down the old post-office building which stands on the southern extremity of City Hall Park, and restore the ground to its original use, is again being pushed in anticipation of the 300th anniversary celebration which New York City is to have in 1926.

The Daughters of Columbia County on June 30, 1921, unveiled a tablet on the Old Court House at Claverack, commemorating the Croswell case, in which Alexander Hamilton defended the freedom of the press.

On June 7, 1921, there was unveiled at Rochester, a tablet in honor of Lafayette's visit to Rochester in 1825. It was erected on Exchange Street, at the site of the tavern kept by Silvius

Hoard, where Lafayette stopped, and where he received his comrades in arms.

Cannon balls, said to be of the French and Indian War, dating back to the capture of Oswego, by French troops and their Indian allies, under Montcalm, in August 1756, were unearthed on August 30, 1921, in West Sixth Street, Oswego, during the process of excavating near the boulder that marks the site of old Fort George. They are to be presented to the Historical Society.

On August 4, 1921, wooden water pipes used in Albany about 1800 were unearthed in Broadway, a few feet north of Maiden Lane.

The Old Stone House at Fort Ann, built in 1825, has been purchased by George O. Knapp of Shelving Rock.

The discovery by A. C. Parker, State Archeologist, of a large arrow head quarry which had been operated by the Indians many years ago, about two miles south of Coxsackie, was announced July 22, 1921. It is said that this quarry may have been in operation about 1,000 years ago and evidences show that the Indians who controlled it had a highly organized and efficient plant. About 500 persons must have been continually employed and systematic management and division of labor are plainly evident. Certain Indians were employed in the quarry, others sorted the flints and still others chipped the pieces into the necessary shapes for arrow and spear heads. Almost 1,500 arrow heads were found in different stages of manufacture as well as a large number of stone hammers used in their manufacture.

Assemblyman Stewart MacFarland of Warren county, custodian of the state park at Lake George, has secured from England plans of old Fort George to aid in the reconstruction of the stronghold which it is hoped to complete before the annual meeting of the New York State Historical Association which is to be held at Lake George in September. The excavations about the old fort are uncovering the original walls and one of the main rooms of the ancient structure has been cleaned out. A brass spigot, believed to have been used in a wine barrel in the days of the occupation of the fort, was unearthed by a workman a few days ago. A large brick fireplace was also found covered by the accumulation of earth. This will be repaired and left among

the other interesting historical relics of the fort. The excavation work must be done with great care to preserve the walls which formed the barrack rooms, kitchens and other quarters within the fortress. The plans which are at hand facilitate the work greatly. It is hoped that a careful examination of the debris which is removed may reveal valuable relics. With the exception of the upper parts, the stone walls of the various rooms are in an excellent state of preservation.

Since the state took over the John Brown farm at North Elba only one room in the house has been used for the storing and exhibition of relics, the rest of the famous homestead being used by the caretaker and his family. The fact that the relics cannot now be properly housed or displayed, has led to the belief that the state may erect a modern house on the farm for the caretaker and provide for the restoration of the homestead to something like its original condition with the relics displayed in the various rooms.

On June 10, 1921, ground was broken in City Hall Park, New York City, for the replacement of the old Liberty Pole that was ordered down by the British in 1775.

#### WORLD WAR MEMORIALS AND COLLECTIONS

Edward C. Widman has donated to the Rochester Historical Society his collection of some 270 letters and 90 post cards which he received from soldiers during the World War. He corresponded with 62 service men.

On June 18, 1921, the New York State College for Teachers at Albany, dedicated a tablet commemorative of the men from that institution who died in service during the World War.

The Johnson City High School is to dedicate a bronze tablet in memory of those of its students and graduates, who died in the World War.

The posts of the American Legion in Albany, are using their best efforts to get Mayor Watt to appoint a local historian to compile Albany's part in the World War, which is to form a part of the State volumes on the subject. All the cities in the Capitol District have appointed such officers. Albany is one of a very few cities in the State that have taken no action.

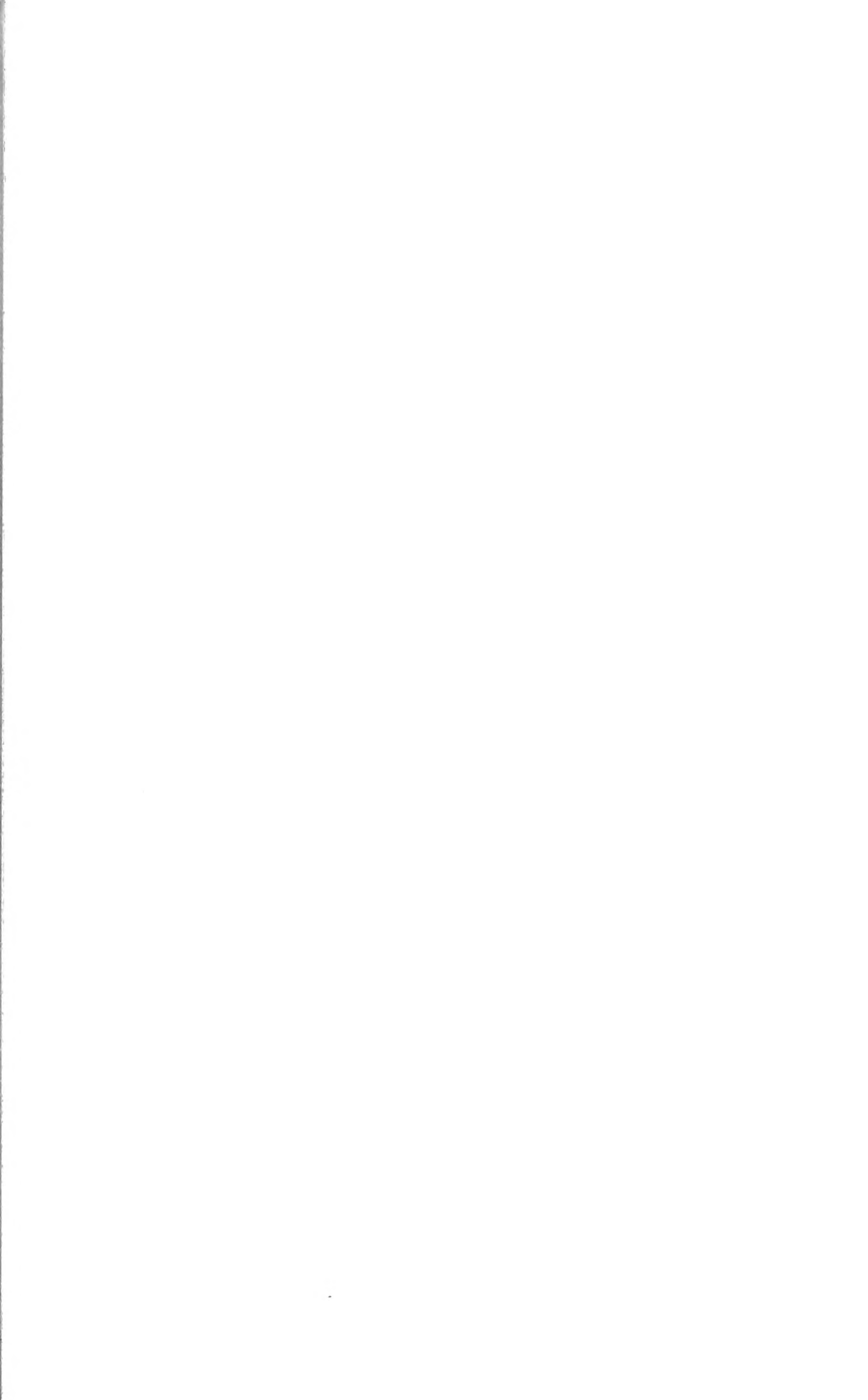
Cuyler Reynolds of Albany in the absence of any officially appointed local historian in the city of Albany has been making a collection of war records on his own account, some of which he has been exhibiting in the Albany Institute and Historical and Art Society. In an interview published in the *Albany Evening Journal* June 2, 1921, he described his methods of work.

## STATEMENT

Statement of Ownership, Management, Circulation, etc., required by the Act of Congress of August 24, 1912, of the QUARTERLY JOURNAL of the New York State Historical Association, published quarterly at Albany, N. Y., for October 1, 1921. State of New York, County of Albany. Before me, a Notary Public, in and for the State and County Aforesaid, personally appeared James Sullivan, who, having been duly sworn according to law, deposes and says that he is the Editor of the QUARTERLY JOURNAL of the New York State Historical Association, and that the following is, to the best of his knowledge and belief, a true statement of the ownership, management, etc., of the aforesaid publication for the date shown in the above caption, required by the Act of August 24, 1912. 1. Publisher, New York State Historical Association, Editor and Managing Editor, James Sullivan, Albany, N. Y. Business Manager, none. 2. That the owners are: The New York State Historical Association and issues no stock; officers are George A. Blauvelt, Monsey, President; Charles Mason Dow, Jamestown, First Vice-President; Gilbert D. B. Hasbrouck, Kingston, Second Vice-President; Frank H. Severance, Buffalo, Third Vice-President; James Sullivan Albany, Corresponding Secretary, and Frederick B. Richards, Glens Falls, Recording Secretary and Treasurer. 3. That the known bondholders, mortgagees and other security holders owning or holding 1 per cent. or more of total amount of bonds, mortgages, or other securities are : None. Signed, James Sullivan, Editor. Sworn to and subscribed before me this 4th day of November, 1921.  
(Seal.) Herbert J. Hamilton, Notary Public. (My commission expires March, 1922.)









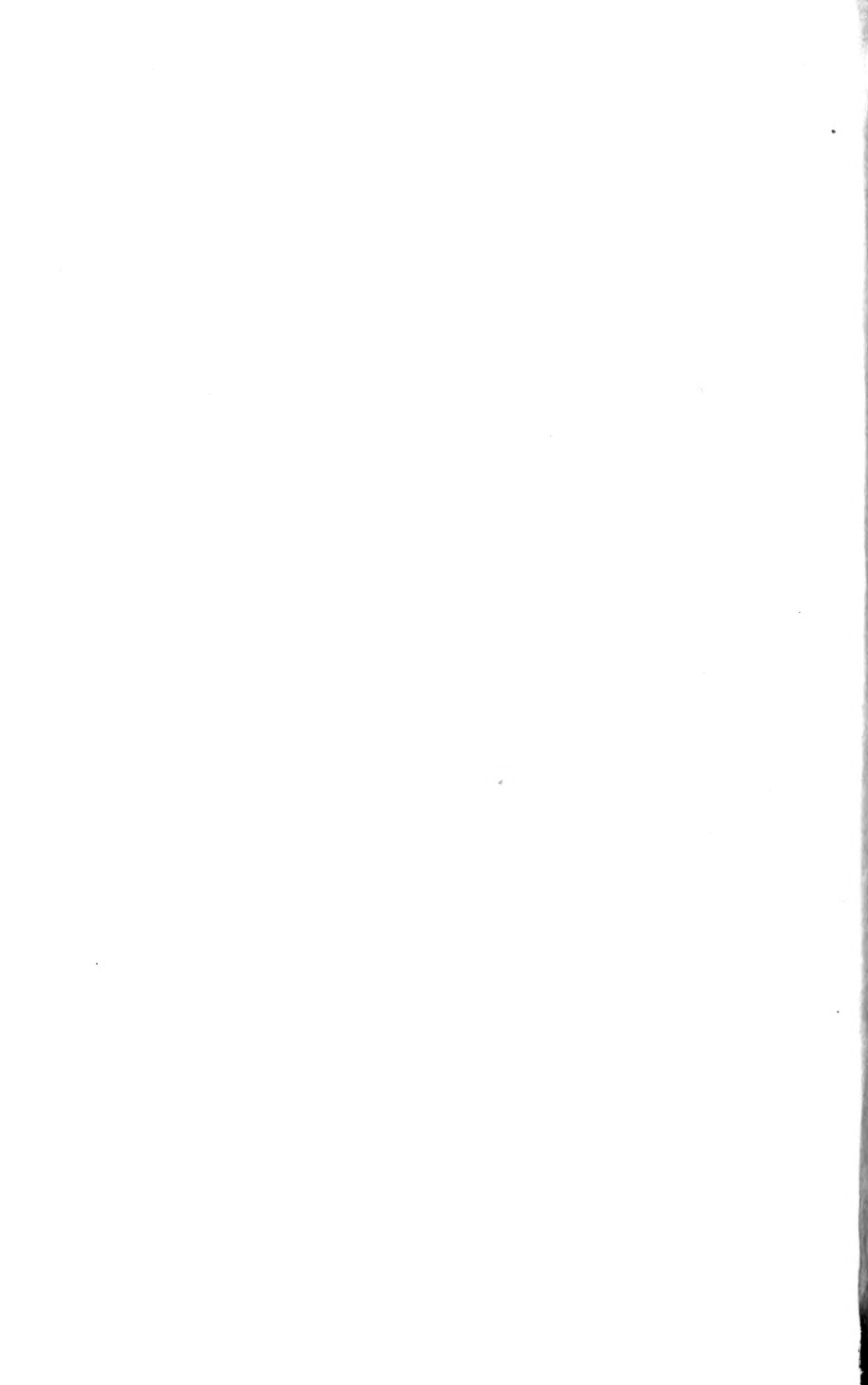
## PUBLICATIONS OF THE NEW YORK STATE HISTORICAL ASSOCIATION

- PROCEEDINGS, volume 1. Constitution and By-laws; with Proceedings of the second annual meeting at Lake George, N. Y., July 31, 1900. Miscellaneous papers, mostly on the Battle of Lake George. 1901. 79 p.
- PROCEEDINGS, volume 2. Third annual meeting at Lake George, N. Y., July 30, 1901. Miscellaneous papers, mostly on Ticonderoga. 1902. 74 p.
- PROCEEDINGS, volume 3. Fourth annual meeting at Lake George, N. Y., July 29, 1902. Miscellaneous papers, mostly on Burgoyne's Campaign, 1903. 88 p.
- PROCEEDINGS, volume 4. Fifth annual meeting at Lake George, N. Y., August 25, 1903. Miscellaneous papers. 1904. 106 p.
- PROCEEDINGS, volume 5. Sixth annual meeting at Lake George, N. Y., August 16, 1904. Miscellaneous papers, largely on the Battle of Bennington. 1905. 199 p.
- PROCEEDINGS, volume 6. Seventh annual meeting at Lake George, N. Y., August 22, 1905. Miscellaneous papers, mostly on Sullivan's Expedition; with E. M. Ruttenber's *Indian Geographical Names*. 1906. 241 p.
- PROCEEDINGS, volume 7. Eighth annual meeting at Lake George, N. Y., August 21-22, 1906. Miscellaneous papers, mostly on the Revolution. 1907. 147 p.
- PROCEEDINGS, volume 8. Ninth annual meeting at Buffalo, N. Y., September 17, 1907. Miscellaneous papers, mostly on the Niagara frontier; and tenth annual meeting at Albany, N. Y., October 12-14, 1908. Miscellaneous papers, mostly on Albany. 1909. 316 p.
- PROCEEDINGS, volume 9. Eleventh annual meeting at Mount Vernon, N. Y., October 19-20, 1909. Miscellaneous papers, largely on Westchester county. 1910. 445 p.
- PROCEEDINGS, volume 10. Twelfth annual meeting on Lake Champlain, October 4-7, 1910. Miscellaneous papers, mostly on Lake Champlain. 1911. 552 p.
- PROCEEDINGS, volume 11. Thirteenth annual meeting at Kingston, N. Y., September 12-14, 1911. Miscellaneous papers, mostly on Ulster county. 381 pages; with *Dutch Records of Kingston*, 171+xvii pages. 1912.
- PROCEEDINGS, volume 12. Fourteenth annual meeting at Saratoga Springs, N. Y., Bennington, Vt., and Schuylerville, N. Y., September 17-20, 1912. Miscellaneous papers, mostly on the Battle of Saratoga. 1913. 423 p.
- PROCEEDINGS, volume 13. Fifteenth annual meeting at Oswego, N. Y., September 29-October 2, 1913. Miscellaneous papers, mostly on Lake Ontario. 1914. 480 p.
- PROCEEDINGS, volume 14. Sixteenth annual meeting at Utica, N. Y., October 5-8, 1914. Miscellaneous papers, mostly on the Mohawk valley. 1915. 504 p.
- PROCEEDINGS, volume 15. Seventeenth annual meeting at West Point, N. Y., October 5-7, 1915. Miscellaneous papers, mostly on West Point. 1916. 360 p.
- PROCEEDINGS, volume 16. Eighteenth annual meeting at Cooperstown, N. Y., October 3-5, 1916. Miscellaneous papers. 1917. 356 p.
- PROCEEDINGS, volume 17. Nineteenth annual meeting at New York City, October 2-4 1917. Papers largely on New York City. 1919. 480 p.

22

de





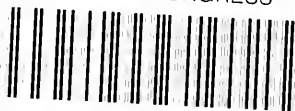








LIBRARY OF CONGRESS



0 014 113 931 9